



THE LIBRARY
OF
THE UNIVERSITY
OF CALIFORNIA
RIVERSIDE



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

The English Dramatists

GEORGE PEELE

VOLUME THE SECOND

Ballantyne Press

BALLANTYNE, HANSON AND CO.
EDINBURGH AND LONDON

THE WORKS
OF
GEORGE PEELE

EDITED BY
A. H. BULLEN, B.A.

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOLUME THE SECOND



LONDON
JOHN C. NIMMO
14, KING WILLIAM STREET, STRAND, W.C.

MDCCCLXXXVIII

CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

	PAGE
DAVID AND BETHSABE	I
SIR CLYOMON AND SIR CLAMYDES	87
A FAREWELL TO SIR JOHN NORRIS AND SIR FRANCIS DRAKE, ETC.; AND A TALE OF TROY	233
AN ECLOGUE GRATULATORY	267
POLYHYMNIA	279
SPEECHES TO QUEEN ELIZABETH AT THEOBALD'S	303
THE HONOUR OF THE GARTER	315
ANGLORUM FERIÆ, ENGLAND'S HOLIDAYS	339
MISCELLANEOUS POEMS	357
MERRY CONCEITED JESTS OF GEORGE PEELE	373
INDEX	405

PUBLISHER'S NOTICE.

Seven hundred and fifty copies of this Edition have been printed and the type distributed ; viz.—Four hundred copies for the English Market, and three hundred and fifty for America. *No more will be published.*

4

DAVID AND BETHSABE.

VOL. II.

A

*The Love of King David and Fair Bethsabe. With the Tragedie of
Absalon. As it hath ben diuers times plaied on the stage. Written
by George Peele. London, Printed by Adam Islip. 1599. 4to.*

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.¹

DAVID.

AMNON, *son of DAVID by AHINOAM.*

CHILEAB, *son of DAVID by ABIGAIL.*

ABSALON, *son of DAVID by MAACAH.*

ADONIA, *son of DAVID by HAGGITH.*

SALOMON, *son of DAVID by BETHSABE.*

JOAB, *captain of the host to DAVID,* } *nephews of DAVID and sons of*
ABISAI, } *his sister ZERUIAH.*

AMASA, *nephew of DAVID and son of his sister ABIGAIL ; captain*
of the host to ABSALON.

JONADAB, *nephew of DAVID and son of his brother SHIMEAH ;*
friend to AMNON.

URIAS, *husband of BETHSABE, and a warrior in DAVID's army.*

NATHAN, *a prophet.*

SADOC, *high-priest.*

AHIMAAS, *his son.*

ABIATHAR, *a priest.*

JONATHAN, *his son.*

ACHITOPHEL, *chief-counsellor to ABSALON.*

CUSAY.

ITHAY.

SEMEL.

JETHRAY.

HANON, *King of Ammon.*

MACHAAS, *King of Gath.*

Messenger, Soldiers, Shepherds, and Attendants.

THAMAR, *daughter of DAVID by MAACAH.*

BETHSABE, *wife of URIAS.*

Widow of THEOCA.

Concubines to DAVID.

Maid to BETHSABE.

Chorus.

¹ There is no list of persons in old ed.

The hearers' minds above the towers of heaven,
And guide them so in this thrice-haughty flight,
Their mounting feathers scorch not with the fire 20
That none can temper but thy holy hand :
To thee for succour flies my feeble Muse,
And at thy feet her iron pen doth use.

DAVID AND BETHSABE.

—o—

[SCENE I.]

*The¹ Prologue-speaker draws a curtain and discovers
BETHSABE, with her Maid, bathing over a spring:
she sings, and DAVID sits above viewing her.*

THE SONG.

HOT sun, cool fire, tempered with sweet air,
Black shade, fair nurse, shadow my white hair :
Shine, sun ; burn, fire ; breathe, air, and ease me ;
Black shade, fair nurse, shroud me, and please me :
Shadow, my sweet nurse, keep me from burning,
Make not my glad cause cause of [my] mourning.
 Let not my beauty's fire
 Inflame unstaïd desire,
 Nor pierce any bright eye
 That wandereth lightly.

10

Beth. Come, gentle Zephyr, tricked with those per-
fumes

¹ Old ed. "He drawes a curtaine," &c.

That erst in Eden sweetened Adam's love,
 And stroke my bosom with thy ¹ silken fan :
 This shade, sun-proof, is yet no proof for thee ;
 Thy body, smoother than this waveless spring,
 And purer than the substance of the same,
 Can creep through that his lances cannot pierce :
 Thou, and thy sister, soft and sacred Air,
 Goddess of life, and governess of health,
 Keeps every fountain fresh and arbour sweet ; 20
 No brazen gate her passage can repulse,
 Nor bushy ² thicket bar thy subtle breath ;
 Then deck thee with thy loose delightsome robes,
 And on thy wings bring delicate perfumes,
 To play the wantons with us through the leaves.

Dav. What tunes, what words, what looks, what
 wonders pierce

My soul, incensèd with a sudden fire ?
 What tree, what shade, what spring, what paradise,
 Enjoys the beauty of so fair a dame ?
 Fair Eva, placed in perfect happiness, 30
 Lending her praise-notes to the liberal heavens,
 Struck with the accents of archangels' tunes,
 Wrought not more pleasure to her husband's thoughts
 Than this fair woman's words and notes to mine.
 May that sweet plain that bears her pleasant weight
 Be still enamelled with discoloured ³ flowers ;

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. "the."

² Old ed. "bushly."

³ A Latinism.—*Discolor*=variegated ; of different colours.

That precious fount bear sand of purest gold ;
 And, for the pebble, let the silver streams
 That pierce earth's bowels to maintain the source,
 Play upon rubies, sapphires, chrysolites ; 40
 The brims let be embraced with golden curls
 Of moss that sleeps with sound the waters make
 For joy to feed the fount with their recourse ;
 Let all the grass that beautifies her bower
 Bear manna every morn instead of dew,
 Or let the dew be sweeter far than that
 That hangs, like chains of pearl, on Hermon hill,
 Or balm which trickled from old Aaron's beard.—
 Cusay, come up, and serve thy lord the king.

Enter CUSAY.

Cu. What service doth my lord the king command ?

Dav. See, Cusay, see the flower of Israel, 51
 The fairest daughter that obeys the king
 In all the land the Lord subdu'd to me ;
 Fairer than Isaac's lover at the well,
 Brighter than inside-bark of new-hewn cedar,
 Sweeter than flames of fine-perfumèd ¹ myrrh,
 And comelier than the silver clouds that dance
 On Zephyr's wings before the King of Heaven.

Cu. Is it not Bethsabe the Hethite's wife,
 Urias, now at Rabbah ² siege with Joab ? 60

¹ Dyce points out that in *England's Parnassus* (p. 397) the reading is "*fire*-perfumed."

² Here and elsewhere the old ed. reads "Rabath."

Dav. Go now, and bring her quickly to the king ;
Tell her, her graces have found grace with him.

Cu. I will, my lord. [*Exit CUSAY to BETHSABE.*]

Dav. Bright Bethsabe shall wash, in David's bower,
In water mixed with purest almond-flower,
And bathe her beauty in the milk of kids :
Bright Bethsabe gives earth¹ to my desires ;
Verdure to earth ; and to that verdure flowers ;
To flowers sweet odours ; and to odours wings
That carry pleasures to the hearts of kings. 70

CUSAY to BETHSABE, she starting as something affright.

Cu. Fair Bethsabe, the King of Israel
From forth his princely tower hath seen thee bathe ;
And thy sweet graces have found grace with him :
Come, then, and kneel unto him where he stands ;
The king is gracious, and hath liberal hands.

Beth. Ah, what is Bethsabe to please the king ?
Or what is David, that he should desire,
For fickle beauty's sake, his servant's wife ?

Cu. David, thou know'st, fair dame, is wise and
just,
Elected to the heart of Israel's God ; 80
Then do not thou expostulate with him
For any action that contents his soul.

¹ This word is suspicious ; but, Collier's proposed correction " birth " is not happy.

Beth. My lord the king, elect to God's own heart,
Should not His gracious jealousy incense
Whose thoughts are chaste : I¹ hate incontinence.

Cu. Woman, thou wrong'st the king, and doubt'st his
honour,
Whose truth maintains the crown of Israel,
Making him stay that bade me bring thee straight.

Beth. The king's poor handmaid will obey my lord.

Cu. Then come, and do thy duty to his grace ; 90
And do what seemeth favour in his sight. [*Exeunt.*]

Dav. Now comes my lover tripping like the roe,
And brings my longings tangled in her hair.
To joy her love I'll build a kingly bower,
Seated in hearing of a hundred streams,
That, for their homage to her sovereign joys,²
Shall, as the serpents fold into their nests
In oblique turnings, wind the³ nimble waves
About the circles of her curious walks ;
And with their murmur summon easeful sleep 100
To lay his golden sceptre on her brows.—
Open the doors, and entertain my love ;
Open, I say, and, as you open, sing,
Welcome fair, Bethsabe, King David's darling.

¹ " Qy. ' Whose thoughts are chaste *and* hate' &c. ?"—*P. A. Daniel.*

² Dyce suggests that this is an error, originating in the word " joy," l. 94. He suggests that the sense requires " charms." I see no harm in the repetition ; but if any alteration is required, I would read " eyes," which is nearer the reading of old ed. (I notice, as these sheets are passing through the press, that the correction " eyes " afterwards occurred to Dyce. It is mentioned in the Addenda to his edition of Greene and Peele.)

³ Dyce adopts Sydney Walker's correction " their."

Enter CUSAY with BETHSABE.

Welcome, fair Bethsabe, King David's darling.
 Thy bones' fair covering, erst discovered fair,
 And all¹ mine eyes with all thy beauties pierced.
 As heaven's bright eye burns most when most he climbs
 The crookèd zodiac with his fiery sphere,
 And shineth furthest from this earthly globe ; 110
 So, since thy beauty scorched my conquered soul,
 I called thee nearer for my nearer cure.

Beth. Too near, my lord, was your unarmèd heart
 When furthest off my hapless beauty pierced ;
 And would this dreary² day had turned to night,
 Or that some pitchy cloud had cloaked the sun,
 Before their lights had caused my lord to see
 His name disparaged and my chastity !

Dav. My love, if want of love have left thy soul
 A sharper sense of honour than thy king, 120
 (For love leads princes sometimes from their seats,)
 As erst my heart was hurt, displeasing thee,
 So come and taste thy ease with easing me.

Beth. One medicine cannot heal our different harms ;
 But rather make both rankle at the bone :
 Then let the king be cunning in his cure,
 Lest flattering both, both perish in his hand.

Dav. Leave it to me, my dearest Bethsabe,
 Whose skill is conversant in deeper cures.—

¹ By reading "Enthrall'd mine eyes," we could make some sense of this corrupt passage.

² A doubtful word.—Qy. "garish"?

And, Cusay, haste thou to my servant Joab,
 Commanding him to send Urias home 130
 With all the speed can possibly be used.

Cu. Cusay will fly about the king's desire.

[*Exeunt.*]

[SCENE II.]

Enter JOAB, ABISAI, URIAS, *and others, with drum
 and ensign.*

Joab. Courage, ye mighty men of Israel,
 And charge your fatal instruments of war
 Upon the bosoms of proud Ammon's sons,
 That have disguised your king's ambassadors,
 Cut half their beards and half their garments off,
 In spite of Israel and his daughters' sons!
 Ye fight the holy battles of Jehovah,
 King David's God, and ours, and Jacob's God,
 That guides your weapons to their conquering strokes,
 Orders your footsteps, and directs your thoughts 10
 To stratagems that harbour victory:
 He casts his sacred eyesight from on high,
 And sees your foes run seeking for their deaths,
 Laughing their labours and their hopes to scorn;
 While 'twixt your bodies and their blunted swords
 He puts on armour of his honour's proof,
 And makes their weapons wound the senseless winds.¹

¹ Cf. Marlowe's *Tamburlaine, First Part*, iii. 3:

"And make your strokes to wound the senseless lure (?)."

Abis. Before this city Rabbah we will lie,
 And shoot forth shafts as thick and dangerous
 As was the hail that Moses mixed with fire, 20
 And threw with fury round about the fields,
 Devouring Pharaoh's friends and Egypt's fruits.

Ur. First, mighty captains, Joab and Abisai,
 Let us assault, and scale this kingly tower,
 Where all their conduits and their fountains are ;
 Then we may easily take the city too.

Joab. Well hath Urias counselled our attempts ;
 And as he spake us, so assault the tower :
 Let Hanon now, the king of Ammon's sons,¹
 Repulse our conquering passage if he dare. 30

HANON *with* KING MACHAAS, *and others, upon the walls.*

Ha. What would the shepherd's-dogs of Israel
 Snatch from the mighty issue of King Ammon,
 The valiant Ammonites and haughty Syrians ?
 'Tis not your late successive victories
 Can make us yield, or quail our courages ;
 But if ye dare assay to scale this tower,
 Our angry swords shall smite ye to the ground,
 And venge our losses on your hateful lives.

Joab. Hanon, thy father Nahas gave relief
 To holy David in his hapless exile, 40
 Livèd his fixèd date, and died in peace :
 But thou, instead of reaping his reward,
 Hast trod it under foot, and scorned our king ;

¹ So Dyce (who compares l. 3).—Old ed. "sonne."

Therefore thy days shall end with violence,
And to our swords thy vital blood shall cleave.

Mach. Hence, thou that bear'st poor Israel's shepherd's-hook,

The proud lieutenant of that base-born king,
And keep within the compass of his fold ;
For, if ye seek to feed on Ammon's fruits,
And stray into the Syrian's fruitful meads, 50
The mastives of our land shall worry ¹ ye,
And pull the weesels ² from your greedy throats.

Abis. Who can endure these pagans' blasphemies?

Ur. My soul repines at this disparagement.

Joab. Assault, ye valiant men of David's host,
And beat these railing dastards from their doors.

*Assault, and they win the tower ; and JOAB speaks
above.*

Thus have we won the tower, which we will keep,
Maugre the sons of Ammon and of Syria.

Enter CUSAY beneath.

Cu. Where is Lord Joab, leader of the host ?

Joab. Here is Lord Joab, leader of the host. 60

Cusay, come up, for we have won the hold. [*He comes.*

Cu. In happy hour,³ then, is Cusay come.

¹ Old ed. "werry."

² "I.e., weasands. (This word is spelt by some of our old writers 'wesils.')."—*Dyce.*

³ Equivalent to a dissyllable. (Old ed. "hower.")

Joab. What news, then, brings Lord Cusay from the king?

Cu. His majesty commands thee out of hand
To send him home Urias from the wars,
For matter of some service he should do.

Ur. 'Tis for no choler hath surprised the king,
I hope, Lord Cusay, 'gainst his servant's truth?

Cu. No; rather to prefer Urias' truth.

Joab. Here, take him with thee, then, and go in peace;
And tell my lord the king that I have fought 71
Against the city Rabbah with success,
And scalèd where¹ the royal palace is,
The conduit-heads and all their sweetest springs:
Then let him come in person to these walls,
With all the soldiers he can bring besides,
And take the city as his own exploit,
Lest I surprize it, and the people give
The glory of the conquest to my name.

Cu. We will, Lord Joab; and great Israel's God 80
Bless in thy hands the battles of our king!

Joab. Farwell, Urias; haste away the king.

Ur. As sure as Joab breathes a victor here,
Urias will haste him and his own return.

[*Exeunt* [CUSAY and URIAS].]

Abis. Let us descend, and ope the palace' gate,
Taking our soldiers in to keep the hold.

Joab. Let us, Abisai:—and, ye sons of Judah,
Be valiant, and maintain your victory. [*Exeunt.*]

¹ Qy. "scalèd, where"?

[SCENE III.]

AMNON,¹ JONADAB, and JETHRAY, AMNON'S Page.

Jonad. What means my lord, the king's belovèd son,
That wears upon his right triumphant arm
The power of Israel for a royal favour,
That holds upon the tables of his hands
Banquets of honour and all thought's content,
To suffer pale and grisly abstinence
To sit and feed upon his fainting cheeks,
And suck away the blood that cheers his looks?

Am. Ah, Jonadab, it is my sister's looks,
On whose sweet beauty I bestow my blood, 10
That make me look so amorously lean ;
Her beauty having seized upon my heart,
So merely² consecrate to her content,
Sets now such guard about his vital blood,
And views the passage with such piercing eyes,
That none can scape to cheer my pining cheeks,
But all is thought too little for her love.

Jonad. Then from her heart thy looks shall be relieved,
And thou shalt joy her as thy soul desires.

Am. How can it be, my sweet friend Jonadab, 20
Since Thamar is a virgin and my sister?

Jonad. Thus it shall be : lie down upon thy bed,
Feigning thee fever-sick and ill-at-ease ;

¹ Old ed. gives throughout " Ammon."

² So Dyce.—Old ed. " merrily." (" Merely" = wholly, absolutely.)

And when the king shall come to visit thee,
 Desire thy sister Thamar may be sent
 To dress some dainties for thy malady :
 Then when thou hast her solely with thyself,
 Enforce some favour to thy manly love.
 See where she comes : entreat her in with thee.

Enter THAMAR.

Tha. What aileth Amnon, with such sickly looks 30
 To daunt the favour¹ of his lovely face ?

Am. Sweet Thamar, sick, and wish some wholesome
 cates

Dressed with the cunning of thy dainty hands.

Tha. That hath the king commanded at my hands :
 Then come and rest thee, while I make thee ready
 Some dainties easeful to thy crazèd soul.

Am. I go, sweet sister, easèd with thy sight. [*Exeunt.*

Restet JONADAB.

Jonad. Why should a prince, whose power may
 command,
 Obey the rebel passions of his love,
 When they contend but 'gainst his conscience, 40
 And may be governed or suppressed by will ?
 Now, Amnon, loose those loving knots of blood,
 That sucked the courage from thy kingly heart,
 And give it passage to thy withered cheeks.

¹ Beauty.

Now, Thamar, rifled¹ are the holy fruits
 That grew on plants of thy virginity ;
 And rotten is thy name in Israel :
 Poor Thamar, little did thy lovely hands
 Foretell an action of such violence
 As to contend with Amnon's lusty arms 50
 Sinewed with vigour of his kindless² love :
 Fair Thamar, now dishonour hunts thy foot,
 And follows thee through every covert shade,
 Discovering thy shame and nakedness,
 Even from the valleys of Jehosaphat
 Up to the lofty mounts of Lebanon ;
 Where cedars, stirred with anger of the winds,
 Sounding in storms the tale of thy disgrace,
 Tremble with fury, and with murmur shake
 Earth with their feet and with their heads the heavens,
 Beating the clouds into their swiftest rack,³ 61
 To bear this wonder round about the world. [Exit.

[*Re-enter*] AMNON *thrusting out* THAMAR. [JETHRAY.]

Am. Hence from my bed, whose sight offends my
 soul

As doth the parbreak of disgorgèd bears !

Tha. Unkind, unprincely, and unmanly Amnon,

¹ My own correction.—Old ed. "ripened."

² Unnatúral,

³ "*I.e.*, moving masses of vapour. 'The winds in the upper region which move the clouds above (which we call the *rack*),' &c.—Bacon's *Sylva Sylvarum, or A Naturall Historie*, § 115, p. 32, ed. 1658."—*Dyce.*

To force, and then refuse thy sister's love,
 Adding unto the fright of thy offence
 The baneful torment of my published shame !
 O, do not this dishonour to thy love,
 Nor clog thy soul with such increasing sin ! 70
 This second evil far exceeds the first.

Am. Jethray, come thrust this woman from my sight,
 And bolt the door upon her if she strive. [*Exit.*¹

Jeth. Go, madam, go ; away ; you must be gone ;
 My lord hath done with you : I pray, depart.

[*He shuts her out.—Exit.*¹

Tha. Whither, alas, ah, whither shall I fly,
 With folded arms and all amazèd soul ?
 Cast as was Eva from that glorious soil,
 (Where all delights sat bating, winged with thoughts,
 Ready to nestle in her naked breasts,) 80
 To bare and barren vales with floods made waste,
 To desert woods, and hills with lightning scorched,
 With death, with shame, with hell, with horror rife !²
 There will I wander from my father's face ;
 There Absalon, my brother Absalon,
 Sweet Absalon, shall hear his sister mourn ;
 There will I lure³ with my windy sighs
 Night-ravens and owls to rend my bloody side,
 Which with a rusty weapon I will wound,
 And make them passage to my panting heart. 90

¹ "*Exit*"—not marked in old ed.

² My own emendation.—Old ed. "sit."

³ So Dyce.—Old ed. "liue." ("Lure" is of course a dissyllable.)

Why talk'st thou, wretch, and leav'st the deed undone?
 Rend hair and garments, as thy heart is rent
 With inward fury of a thousand griefs,
 And scatter them by these unhallowed doors,
 To figure Amnon's resting¹ cruelty,
 And tragic spoil of Thamar's chastity.

Enter ABSALON.

Abs. What causeth Thamar to exclaim so much?

Tha. The cause that Thamar shameth to disclose.

Abs. Say; I thy brother will revenge that cause.

Tha. Amnon, our father's son, hath forcèd me, 100
 And thrusts me from him as the scorn of Israel.

Abs. Hath Amnon forcèd thee? by David's hand,
 And by the covenant God hath made with him,
 Amnon shall bear his violence to hell;
 Traitor to heaven, traitor to David's throne,
 Traitor to Absalon and Israel.

This fact² hath Jacob's ruler seen from heaven,
 And through a cloud of smoke and tower of fire,
 As he rides vaunting him upon the greens,
 Shall tear his chariot-wheels with violent winds, 110
 And throw his body in the bloody sea;
 At him the thunder shall discharge his bolt;
 And his fair spouse,³ with bright and fiery wings,

¹ There seems to be some corruption here; but "resting" may be used in the sense of "lasting." (Qy. "wresting"?)

² Crime.

³ This metaphor was vastly admired by Hawkins, who in the preface to *The Origin of the English Drama* (i. xi.), declared it to be "worthy of Æschylus." "Worthy of the poet Bays," he should have said.

Sit ever burning on his hateful bones :
 Myself, as swift as thunder or his spouse,
 Will hunt occasion with a secret hate,
 To work false Amnon an ungracious end.—
 Go in, my sister ; rest thee in my house ;
 And God in time shall take this shame from thee.

Tha. Nor God nor time will do that good for me. 120

[*Exit* THAMAR : *restat* ABSALON.]

Enter DAVID *with his train.*

Dav. My Absalon, what mak'st thou here alone,
 And bear'st such discontentment in thy brows ?

Abs. Great cause hath Absalon to be displeased,
 And in his heart to shroud the wounds of wrath.

Dav. 'Gainst whom should Absalon be thus dis-
 pleased ?

Abs. 'Gainst wicked Amnon, thy ungracious son,
 My brother and fair Thamar's by the king,
 My step-brother by mother and by kind :
 He hath dishonoured David's holiness,
 And fixed a blot of lightness on his throne, 130
 Forcing my sister Thamar when he feigned
 A sickness, sprung from root of heinous lust.

Dav. Hath Amnon brought this evil on my house,
 And suffered sin to smite his father's bones ?
 Smite, David, deadlier than the voice of heaven,
 And let hate's fire be kindled in thy heart :
 Frame in the arches of thy angry brows,
 Making thy forehead, like a comet, shine,
 To force false Amnon tremble at thy looks.

Sin, with his sevenfold crown and purple robe, 140
 Begins his triumphs in my guilty throne ;
 There sits he watching with his hundred eyes
 Our idle minutes and our wanton thoughts ;
 And with his baits, made of our frail desires,
 Gives us the hook that hales our souls to hell :
 But with the spirit of my kingdom's God
 I'll thrust the flattering tyran² from his throne,
 And scourge his bondslaves from my hallowed court
 With rods of iron and thorns of sharpened steel.
 Then, Absalon, revenge not thou this sin ; 150
 Leave it to me, and I will chasten him.

Abs. I am content : then grant, my lord the king,
 Himself with all his other lords would come
 Up to my sheep-feast on the plain of Hazor.

Dav. Nay, my fair son, myself with all my lords
 Will bring thee too much charge ; yet some shall go.

Abs. But let my lord the king himself take pains ;
 The time of year is pleasant for your grace,
 And gladsome summer in her shady robes,
 Crownèd with roses and with painted² flowers, 160
 With all her nymphs, shall entertain my lord,
 That, from the thicket of my verdant groves,
 Will sprinkle honey-dews about his breast,
 And cast sweet balm upon his kingly head :
 Then grant thy servant's boon, and go, my lord.

Dav. Let it content my sweet son Absalon,
 That I may stay, and take my other lords.

¹ Old form of "tyrant."

² So Dyce.—Old ed. "planted."

Abs. But shall thy best-belovèd Amnon go?

Dav. What needeth it, that Amnon go with thee?

Abs. Yet do thy son and servant so much grace. 170

Dav. Amnon shall go, and all my other lords,
Because I will give grace to Absalon.

Enter CUSAY and URIAS, with others.

Cu. Pleaseth my lord the king, his servant Joab
Hath sent Urias from the Syrian wars.

Dav. Welcome, Urias, from the Syrian wars,
Welcome to David as his dearest lord.

Ur. Thanks be to Israel's God and David's grace,
Urias finds such greeting with the king.

Dav. No other greeting shall Urias find
As long as David¹ sways th' elected seat 180
And consecrated throne of Israel.

Tell me, Urias, of my servant Joab ;
Fights he with truth the battles of our God,
And for the honour of the Lord's anointed ?

Ur. Thy servant Joab fights the chosen wars
With truth, with honour, and with high success,
And, 'gainst the wicked king of Ammon's sons,
Hath, by the finger of our sovereign's God,
Besieged the city Rabbah, and achieved
The court of waters, where the conduits run, 190
And all the Ammonites' delightsome springs :
Therefore he wisheth David's mightiness

¹ Old ed. " Dauids."

Should number out the host of Israel,
And come in person to the city Rabbah,
That so her conquest may be made the king's,
And Joab fight as his inferior.

Dav. This hath not God and Joab's prowess done
Without Urias' valour, I am sure,
Who, since his true conversion from a Hethite
To an adopted son of Israel, 200
Hath fought like one whose arms were lift by heaven,
And whose bright sword was edged with Israel's wrath.
Go, therefore, home, Urias, take thy rest ;
Visit thy wife and household with the joys
A victor and a favourite of the king's
Should exercise with honour after arms.

Ur. Thy servant's bones are yet not half so crazed,
Nor constitute on such a sickly mould,
That for so little service he should faint,
And seek, as cowards, refuge of his home : 210
Nor are his thoughts so sensually stirred,
To stay the arms with which the Lord would smite
And fill their circle with his conquered foes,
For wanton bosom of a flattering wife.

Dav. Urias hath a beauteous sober wife,
Yet young, and framed of tempting flesh and blood ;
Then, when the king hath summoned thee from arms,
If thou unkindly shouldst refrain her bed,
Sin might be laid upon Urias' soul,
If Bethsabe by frailty hurt her fame : 220

¹ Old ed. " valours."

Then go, Urias, solace in her love ;
Whom God hath knit to thee, tremble to loose.

Ur. The king is much too tender of my ease :
The ark and Israel and Judah dwell
In palaces and rich pavilions ;
But Joab and his brother in the fields,
Suffering the wrath of winter and the sun :
And shall Urias (of more shame than they)
Banquet, and loiter in the work of heaven ?
As sure as thy soul doth live, my lord, 230
Mine ears shall never lean to such delight,
When holy labour calls me forth to fight.

Dav. Then be it with Urias' manly heart
As best his fame may shine in Israel.

Ur. Thus shall Urias' heart be best content,
Till thou dismiss me back to Joab's bands :
This ground before the king my master's doors
Shall be my couch, and this unwearied arm
The proper pillow of a soldier's head ; [*He lies down.*
For never will I lodge within my house, 240
Till Joab triumph in my secret vows.¹

Dav. Then fetch some flagons of our purest wine,
That we may welcome home our hardy friend
With full carouses to his fortunes past
And to the honours of his future arms ;
Then will I send him back to Rabbah siege,
And follow with the strength of Israel.

¹ The words " my secret vows " are to me unintelligible. Were it not that a rhyme seems to be required for " house," I would read " in thy sacred cause."

Enter one with the flagons of wine.

Arise, Urias ; come and pledge the king.

Ur. If David think me worthy such a grace,
I will be bold and pledge my lord the king. 250
[*He riseth.*]

Dav. Absalon and Cusay both shall drink
To good Urias and his happiness.

Abs. We will, my lord, to please Urias' soul.

Dav. I will begin, Urias, to thyself,
And all the treasure of the Ammonites,
Which here I promise to impart to thee,
And bind that promise with a full carouse. [*He drinks.*]

Ur. What seemeth pleasant in my sovereign's eyes,
That shall Urias do till he be dead.

Dav. Fill him the cup. [*URIAS drinks.*]—Follow, ye
lords that love 260

Your sovereign's health, and do as he hath done.

Abs. Ill may he thrive, or live in Israel,
That loves not David, or denies his charge.—
Urias,¹ here is to Abisai's health,
Lord Joab's brother and thy loving friend. [*He drinks.*]

Ur. I pledge Lord Absalon and Abisai's health.
[*He drinks.*]

Cu. Here now, Urias, to the health of Joab,
And to the pleasant journey we shall have
When we return to mighty Rabbah siege. [*He drinks.*]

Ur. Cusay, I pledge thee all with all my heart.— 270

¹ " Urias . . . friend "—printed as one line in old eds.

Give me some drink, ye servants of the king ;
Give me my drink. [*He drinks.*]

Dav. Well done, my good Urias ! drink thy fill,
That in thy fulness David may rejoice.

Ur. I will, my lord.

Abs. Now, Lord Urias, one carouse to me.

Ur. No, sir, I'll drink to the king ;
Your father is a better man than you.

Dav. Do so, Urias ; I will pledge thee straight.

Ur. I will indeed, my lord and sovereign ; 280
I['ll] once in my days be so bold.

Dav. Fill him his glass.

Ur. Fill me my glass. [*He gives him¹ the glass.*]

Dav. Quickly, I say.

Ur. Quickly, I say.—Here, my lord, by your favour
now I drink to you. [*He drinks.*]

Dav. I pledge thee, good Urias, presently. [*He drinks.*]

Abs. Here, then, Urias, once again for me,
And to the health of David's children. [*He drinks.*]

Ur. David's children ! 290

Abs. Ay, David's children : wilt thou pledge me,
man ?

Ur. Pledge me, man !

Abs. Pledge me, I say, or else thou lov'st us not.

Ur. What, do you talk ? do you talk ? I'll no more ;
I'll lie down here.

Dav. Rather, Urias, go thou home and sleep.

¹ *I.e.*, the cupbearer.

Ur. O, ho, sir! would you make me break my sentence? [*He lies down.*] Home, sir! no, indeed, sir: I'll sleep upon mine arm, like a soldier; sleep like a man as long as I live in Israel.

Dav. [*aside.*] If naught will serve to save his wife's
renown,

I'll send him with a letter unto Joab
To put him in the forefront of the wars,
That so my purposes may take effect.—

Help him in, sirs. [*Exeunt*¹ DAVID and ABSALON.

Cu. Come, rise, Urias; get thee in and sleep.

Ur. I will not go home, sir; that's flat.

Cu. Then come and rest thee upon David's bed.

Ur. On, afore, my lords, on, afore. [*Exeunt.*

[SECOND] CHORUS.

Chorus. O proud revolt of a presumptuous man,
Laying his bridle in the neck of sin,
Ready to bear him past his grave to hell!
Like as the fatal raven,² that in his voice

¹ Old ed. "Exit."

² "Imitated from Du Bartas:

' Ainsi que les corbeaux d'une penne venteuse
Passans les bois pleurans de l'Arabie heureuse,
Mesprisent les iardins et pares delicieux,
Qui de fleurs esmaillez vont parfumant les cieux,
Et s'arrestent, gloutons, sur la salle carcasse
D'un criminel rompu n'aguere à coups de masse,' &c.

L'Arche,—*Premiere Partie du Second Jour de la Seconde
Semaine*, p. 270, ed. 1632, 12°.

Carries the dreadful summons of our deaths,
 Flies by the fair Arabian spiceries,
 Her pleasant gardens and delightsome parks,
 Seeming to curse them with his hoarse exclams,
 And yet doth stoop with hungry violence
 Upon a piece of hateful carrion ; 10
 So wretched man, displeas'd with those delights
 Would yield a quickening savour to his soul,
 Pursues with eager and unstanchèd thirst
 The greedy longings of his loathsome flesh.
 If holy David so shook hands with sin,
 What shall our baser spirits glory in ?
 This¹ kingly [ruler] giving lust her rein
 Pursues the sequel with a greater ill.
 Urias in the forefront of the wars
 Is murdered by the hateful heathens' sword, 20
 And David joys his too dear Bethsabe.

In Chapman and Shirley's *Chabot, Admiral of France*, act iv. sc. 1, we find,—

' Like crows and carrion birds,
 They fly o'er flowery meads, clear springs, fair gardens,
 And stoop at carcasses.'—*Dyce.*

The passage of Du Bartas was greatly relished by our poets. Here is another imitation of it, from the anonymous *Distracted Emperor* :

" But as the ravens, which in Arabia live,
 Having flown all the field of spices o'er,
 Seize on a stinking carcass," &c.

—Some lines from the present prologue are quoted in *England's Par-nassus*, 1600.

¹ "Qy. 'This kingly giving unto lust,' &c."—*P. A. Daniel.*

Suppose this past, and that the child is born,
Whose death the prophet solemnly doth mourn. [*Exit.*]

[SCENE IV.]

Enter BETHSABE with her Handmaid.

Beth. Mourn, Bethsabe, bewail thy foolishness,
Thy sin, thy shame, the sorrow of thy soul :
Sin, shame, and sorrow swarm about thy soul ;
And, in the gates and entrance of my heart,
Sadness, with wreathèd arms, hangs her complaint.
No comfort from the ten-stringed instrument,
The tinkling¹ cymbal, or the ivory lute ;
Nor doth the sound of David's kingly harp
Make glad the broken heart of Bersabe :
Jerusalem is filled with thy complaint, 10
And in the streets of Sion sits thy grief.
The babe is sick, sick to the death, I fear,
The fruit that sprung from thee to David's house ;
Nor may the pot of honey and of oil
Glad David or his handmaid's countenance.
Urias—woe is me to think hereon !
For who is it among the sons of men
That saith not to my soul, " The king hath sinned ;
David hath done amiss, and Bersabe
Laid snares of death unto Urias' life ? " 20

¹ Old ed. "twinkling."

My sweet Urias, fall'n into the pit
 Art thou, and gone even to the gates of hell
 For Bersabe, that wouldst not shroud her shame.
 O, what is it to serve the lust of kings !
 How lion-like th[e]y rage when we resist !
 But, Bersabe, in humbleness attend
 The grace that God will to his handmaid send.

[*Exeunt.*¹

[SCENE V.]

DAVID *in his gown, walking sadly.* [*Servants attending.*]
 To him NATHAN.

Dav. The babe is sick, and sad is David's heart,
 To see the guiltless bear the guilty's pain.
 David, hang up thy harp ; hang down thy head ;
 And dash thy ivory lute against the stones.
 The dew, that on the hill of Hermon falls,
 Rains not on Sion's tops and lofty towers ;
 The plains of Gath,² and Askaron rejoice,
 And David's thoughts are spent in pensiveness :
 The babe is sick, sweet babe, that Bethsabe
 With woman's pain brought forth to Israel.

10

Enter NATHAN.

But what saith Nathan to his lord the king ?

¹ Old ed. "*Exit Beth.*"

² "This and the next line are transposed in the 4to."—*Dyce.*

NATHAN *to* DAVID.

Na. Thus Nathan saith unto his lord the king.
 There were two men both dwellers in one town :
 The one was mighty, and exceeding rich
 In oxen, sheep, and cattle of the field ;
 The other poor, having nor ox, nor calf,
 Nor other cattle, save one little lamb
 Which he had bought and nourished by the hand ;
 And it grew up, and fed with him and his,
 And eat and drank as he and his were wont, 20
 And in his bosom slept, and was to him¹
 As was his daughter or his dearest child.
 There came a stranger to this wealthy man ;
 And he refused and spared to take his own,
 Or of his store to dress or make him meat,
 But took the poor man's sheep, partly,² poor man's
 store,
 And dressed it for this stranger in his house.
 What, tell me, shall be done to him for this ?

Dav. Now, as the Lord doth live, this wicked man
 Is judged and shall become the child of death ; 30
 Fourfold to the poor man shall he restore,
 That without mercy took his lamb away.

Na. Thou art the man ; and thou hast judged thy-
 self.
 David, thus saith the Lord thy God by me :

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. " liue."

² The text is hopelessly corrupt.

"I thee anointed king in Israel,
 And saved thee from the tyranny of Saul ;
 Thy master's house I gave thee to possess ;
 His wives into thy bosom did I give,
 And Judah and Jerusalem withal ;
 And might, thou know'st, if this had been too small, 40
 Have given thee more :
 Wherefore, then, hast thou gone so far astray,
 And hast done evil, and sinnèd in my sight ?
 Urias thou hast killèd with the sword ;
 Yea, with the sword of the uncircumcised
 Thou hast him slain : wherefore, from this day forth,
 The sword shall never go from thee and thine ;
 For thou hast ta'en this Hethite's wife to thee :
 Wherefore, behold, I will," saith Jacob's God,
 "In thine own house stir evil up to thee ; 50
 Yea, I before thy face will take thy wives,
 And give them to thy neighbour to possess."
 This shall be done to David in the day,
 That Israel openly may see thy shame.

Dav. Nathan, I have, against the Lord I have,
 Sinnèd ; O, sinnèd grievously ! and, lo,
 From heaven's throne doth David throw himself,
 And groan and grovel to the gates of hell !

[*He falls down.*]

Na. David, stand up : thus saith the Lord by me :
 "David the king shall live." For He hath seen 60
 The true repentant sorrow of thy heart ;
 But, for thou hast in this misdeed of thine
 Stirred up the enemies of Israel

To triumph, and blaspheme the God of Hosts,
 And say, he set a wicked man to reign
 Over his lovèd people and his tribes,—
 The child shall surely die, that erst was born,
 His mother's sin, his kingly father's scorn.¹

[*Exit* NATHAN.

Dav. How just is Jacob's God in all his works!
 But must it die that David loveth so? 70
 O, that the mighty one of Israel
 Nill² change his doom, and says the babe must die!
 Mourn, Israel, and weep in Sion-gates;
 Wither, ye cedar-trees of Lebanon;
 Ye sprouting almonds, with your flowering tops,
 Droop, drown, and drench in Hebron's fearful streams:
 The babe must die that was to David born,
 His mother's sin, his kingly father's scorn.

[*DAVID sits sadly.*

Enter CUSAY to *DAVID* and his train.

Servus. What tidings bringeth Cusay to the king?

Cu. To thee, the servant of King David's court, 80
 This bringeth Cusay, as the prophet spake;
 The Lord hath surely stricken to the death
 The child new-born by that Urias' wife,
 That by the sons of Ammon erst was slain.

Servus. Cusay, be still; the king is vexèd sore:
 How shall he speed that brings this tidings first,

¹ Shame.

² Will not.

When, while the child was yet alive, we spake,
And David's heart would not be comforted?

Dav. Yea, David's heart will not be comforted!

What murmur ye, the servants of the king? 90

What tidings telleth Cusay to the king?

Say, Cusay, lives the child, or is he dead?

Cu. The ¹ child is dead, that of Urias' wife
David begat.

Dav. Urias' wife, saist thou?

The child is dead, then ceaseth David's shame:

Fetch me to eat, and give me wine to drink;

Water to wash, and oil to clear my looks;

Bring down your shalms, your cymbals, and your pipes;

Let David's heart and lute, his hand and voice,

Give laud to him that loveth Israel,

And sing his praise that shendeth ² David's fame, 100

That put away his sin from out his sight,

And sent his shame into the streets of Gath.

Bring ye to me the mother of the babe,

That I may wipe the tears from off her face,

And give her comfort with this hand of mine,

And deck fair Bersabe with ornaments,

That she may bear to me another son,

That may be lovèd of the Lord of Hosts;

For where he is, of force must David go,

But never may he come where David is. 110

¹ "The child . . . begat"—one line in old ed.

² Defendeth.—For this use of the word *shend* see Halliwell's *Nares* and Halliwell's *Arch. Dict.*

They bring in water, wine, and oil. Music and a banquet ;
 [and enter BETHSABE].

Fair Bersabe, sit thou, and sigh no more :—
 And sing and play, you servants of the king :
 Now sleepeth David's sorrow with the dead,
 And Bersabe liveth to Israel.

They use all solemnities together and sing, &c.

Now arms and warlike engines for assault
 Prepare at once, ye men of Israel,
 Ye men of Judah and Jerusalem,
 That Rabbah may be taken by the king,
 Lest it be callèd after Joab's name,
 Nor David's glory shine in Sion streets. 120
 To Rabbah marcheth David with his men,
 To chastise Ammon and the wicked ones.
[*Excunt omnes.*

[SCENE VI.]

Enter ABSALON with two or three.

Abs. Set up your mules, and give them well to eat,
 And let us meet our brothers at the feast.
 Accursèd is the master¹ of this feast,
 Dishonour of the house of Israel,
 His sister's slander, and his mother's shame :

¹ Absalon (in scene iii.) was to have given the feast ; but it now appears that he is to be his brother Amnon's guest.

Shame be his share that could such ill contrive,
 To ravish Thamar, and, without a pause,
 To drive her shamefully from out his house :
 But may his wickedness find just reward !
 Therefore doth Absalon conspire with you, 10
 That Amnon die what time he sits to eat ;
 For in the holy temple have I sworn
 Wreak of his villainy in Thamar's rape.
 And here he comes : bespeak him gently, all,
 Whose death is deeply graved in my heart.

*Enter AMNON with ADONIA and JONADAB, to ABSALON
 and his Company.*

Am. Our shearers are not far from hence, I wot ;
 And Amnon to you all his brethren
 Giveth such welcome as our fathers erst
 Were wont in Judah and Jerusalem ;—
 But, specially, Lord Absalon, to thee, 20
 The honour of thy house and progeny :¹
 Sit down and dine with me, King David's son,
 Thou fair young man, whose hairs shine in mine eye
 Like golden wires of David's ivory lute.

Abs. Amnon, where be thy shearers and thy men,
 That we may pour in plenty of thy wines,²
 And eat thy goats'-milk, and rejoice with thee ?

Am. Here cometh Amnon's shearers and his men :—
 [Come,] Absalon, sit and rejoice with me.

¹ Race.

² Old ed. "vines."

Here enter a company of Shepherds, and dance and sing.

Drink, Absalon, in praise of Israel ; 30
Welcome to Amnon's fields from David's court.

Abs. [*stabbing AMNON.*]¹ Die with thy draught ; perish,
and die accursed ;

Dishonour to the honour of us all ;
Die for the villany to Thamar done,
Unworthy thou to be King David's son ! [*Exit ABSALON.*

Jonad. O, what hath Absalon for Thamar done,
Murdered his brother, great King David's son !

Ad. Run, Jonadab, away, and make it known,
What cruelty this Absalon hath shown.
Amnon, thy brother Adonia shall 40
Bury thy body among the dead men's bones ;
And we will make complaint to Israel
Of Amnon's death and pride of Absalon.

[*Exeunt omnes.*

[SCENE VII.]

*Enter DAVID with JOAB, ABYSSUS, CUSAY ; with drum
and ensign against RABBAH.*

Dav. This is the town of the uncircumcised,
The city of the kingdom, this is it,
Rabbah, where wicked Hanon sitteth king.
Despoil this king, this Hanon of his crown ;
Unpeople Rabbah and the streets thereof ;

¹ Not marked in old ed.

For in their blood, and slaughter of the slain,
 Lieth the honour of King David's line.
 Joab, Abyshai, and the rest of you,
 Fight ye this day for great Jerusalem.

*Enter*¹ HANON *and others on the walls.*

Joab. And see where Hanon shows him on the walls ;
 Why, then, do we forbear to give assault, 11
 That Israel may, as it is promisèd,
 Subdue the daughters of the Gentile's tribes?
 All this must be performed by David's hand.

Dav. Hark to me, Hanon, and remember well :
 As sure as He doth live that kept my host,
 What time our young men, by the pool of Gibeon,
 Went forth against the strength of Isboseth,
 And twelve to twelve did with their weapons play ;
 So sure art thou and thy men of war 20
 To feel the sword of Israel this day,
 Because thou hast defèd Jacob's God,
 And suffered Rabbah with the Philistine
 To rail upon the tribe of Benjamin.

Ha. Hark, man : as sure as Saul thy master fell,
 And gored his sides upon the mountain-tops,
 And Jonathan, Abinadab, and Melchisua,
 Watered the dales and deeps of Askaron
 With bloody streams, that from Gilboa ran
 In channels through the wilderness of Ziph, 30

¹ Not marked in old ed.

What time the sword of the uncircumcised
Was drunken with the blood of Israel ;
So sure shall David perish with his men
Under the walls of Rabbah, Hanon's town.

Joab. Hanon, the God of Israel hath said,
David the king shall wear that crown of thine
That weighs a talent of the finest gold,
And triumph in the spoil of Hanon's town,
When Israel shall hale thy people hence,
And turn them to the tile-kiln, man and child, 40
And put them under harrows made of iron,
And hew their bones with axes, and their limbs
With iron swords divide and tear in twain.
Hanon, this shall be done to thee and thine,
Because thou hast defied Israel.—
To arms, to arms, that Rabbah feel revenge,
And Hanon's town become King David's spoil!

*Alarum, excursions, assault; exeunt omnes. Then the
trumpets, and DAVID with HANON'S crown.*

Dav. Now clattering arms and wrathful storms of war
Have thundered over Rabbah's razèd towers ;
The wreakful ire of great Jehovah's arm, 50
That for his people made the gates to rend,
And clothed the cherubins in fiery coats
To fight against the wicked Hanon's town.
Pay thanks, ye men of Judah, to the King,
The God of Sion and Jerusalem,
That hath exalted Israel to this,
And crownèd David with this diadem.

Joab. Beauteous and bright is he among the tribes ;
 As when the sun ¹ attired in glistering robe,
 Comes dancing from his oriental gate, 60
 And bridegroom-like hurls through the gloomy air
 His radiant beams, such doth King David show,
 Crowned with the honour of his enemies' town,
 Shining in riches like the firmament,
 The starry vault that overhangs the earth :
 So looketh David King of Israel.

Abis. Joab, why doth not David mount his throne
 Whom heaven hath beautified with Hanon's crown ?
 Sound trumpets, shalms, and instruments of praise,
 To Jacob's God for David's victory. 70
 [*Trumpets, &c.*]

Enter JONADAB.

*Jonad.*² Why doth the King of Israel rejoice ?
 Why sitteth David crowned with Rabbah's rule ?
 Behold, there hath great heaviness befall'n
 In Amnon's fields by Absalon's misdeed ;
 And Amnon's shearers and their feast of mirth

¹ "Hawkins, who (Preface to *The Origin of the English Drama*, vol. i. p. 11) justly praises this simile, had forgotten the following lines of Spencer :

'At last, the golden orientall gate
 Of greatest heaven gan to open fayre ;
 And Phœbus, fresh as brydegrome to his mate,
 Came dauncing forth, shaking his deawie hayre ;
 And hurld his glistring beams through gloomy ayre.'

The Faerie Queene, B. I. c. 5. st. 2."—*Dyce.*

² "Jonadab is out of place here : he should not enter till about the end of David's speech, say at line eighty-two. The first speech given to him here should be delivered by a messenger."—*P. A. Daniel.*

Absalon hath o'erturnèd with his sword ;
Nor liveth any of King David's sons
To bring this bitter tidings to the king.

Dav. Ay me, how soon are David's triumphs dashed,
How suddenly declineth David's pride ! 80
As doth the daylight settle in the west,
So dim is David's glory and his gite ¹
Die, David ; for to thee is left no seed
That may revive thy name in Israel.

Jonad. In Israel is left of David's seed.
Comfort your lord, you servants of the king.—
Behold, thy sons return in mourning weeds,
And only Amnon Absalon hath slain.

Enter ADONIA with other Sons.

Dav. Welcome, my sons ; dearer to me you are
Than is this golden crown or Hanon's spoil. 90
O, tell me, then, tell me, my sons, I say,
How cometh it to pass that Absalon
Hath slain his brother Amnon with the sword ?

Ad. Thy sons, O king, went up to Amnon's fields,
To feast with him and eat his bread and oil ;
And Absalon upon his mule doth come,
And to his men he saith, "When Amnon's heart
Is merry and secure, then strike him dead,
Because he forcèd Thamar shamefully,

¹ "In the present passage, as well as in the following of our author's *Tale of Troy*, seems to mean—splendour, brightness :

'Done is thy pride, dim is thy glorious gite.'"—*Dyce*.

And hated her, and threw her forth his doors." 100
 And this did he ; and they with him conspire,
 And kill thy son in wreak of Thamar's wrong.

Dav. How long shall Judah and Jerusalem
 Complain, and water Sion with their tears !
 How long shall Israel lament in vain,
 And not a man among the mighty ones
 Will hear the sorrows of King David's heart !
 Amnon, thy life was pleasing to thy lord,
 As to mine ears the music of my lute,
 Or songs that David tuneth to his harp ; 110
 And Absalon hath ta'en from me away
 The gladness of my sad distressèd soul.

[*Exeunt* JOAB and others.¹

Manet DAVID.² *Enter* Widow of Thecoa.

W. of T. [*kneeling.*] God save King David, King of
 Israel,

And bless the gates of Sion for his sake !

Dav. Woman, why mournest thou? rise from the earth ;
 Tell me what sorrow hath befall'n thy soul.

W. of T. [*rising.*] Thy servant's soul, O king, is
 troubled sore,

And grievous is the anguish of her heart ;
 And from Thecoa doth thy handmaid come.

¹ Old ed. "*Exeunt omnes.*"

² "One or more scenes are wanting here ; the loss deprives the scene with the 'Widow' of all motive : David has not banished Absalon nor taken any course to revenge the death of Amnon. The fragment relegated to the margin (see p. 73) may have formed part of one of these missing scenes."—*P. A. Daniel.*

Dav. Tell me, and say, thou woman of Thecoa, 120
What aileth thee or what is come to pass.

W. of T. Thy servant is a widow in Thecoa.
Two sons thy handmaid had ; and they, my lord,
Fought in the field, where no man went betwixt,
And so the one did smite and slay the other.
And, lo, behold, the kindred doth arise,
And cry on him that smote¹ his brother,
That he therefore may be the child of death ;
“ For we will follow and destroy the heir.”
So will they quench that sparkle that is left, 130
And leave nor name nor issue on the earth
To me or to thy handmaid’s husband dead.

Dav. Woman, return ; go home unto thy house :
I will take order that thy son be safe.
If any man say otherwise than well,
Bring him to me, and I shall chástise him ;
For, as the Lord doth live, shall not a hair
Shed from thy son or fall upon the earth.
Woman, to God alone belongs revenge :
Shall, then, the kindred slay him for his sin ? 140

W. of T. Well hath King David to his handmaid
spoke :
But wherefore, then, hast thou determinèd
So hard a part against the righteous tribes,
To follow and pursue the banishèd,
Whenas to God alone belongs revenge ?
Assuredly thou saist against thyself :

¹ Quy. “ And cry upon him that *did* smite,” &c.

Therefore call home again the banishèd ;
 Call home the banishèd, that he may live,
 And raise to thee some fruit in Israel.

Dav. Thou woman of Thecoa, answer me, 150
 Answer me one thing I shall ask of thee :
 Is not the hand of Joab in this work ?
 Tell me, is not his finger in this fact ?

W. of T. It is, my lord ; his hand is in this work :
 Assure thee, Joab, captain of thy host,
 Hath put these words into thy handmaid's mouth ;
 And thou art as an angel from on high,
 To understand the meaning of my heart :
 Lo, where he cometh to his lord the king.

Enter JOAB.

Dav. Say, Joab, didst thou send this woman in 160
 To put this parable for Absalon ?

Joab. Joab, my lord, did bid this woman speak,
 And she hath said ; and thou hast understood.

Dav. I have, and am content to do the thing.
 Go fetch my son, that he may live with me.

Joab. [*kneels.*] Now God be blessèd for King David's
 life !

Thy servant Joab hath found grace with thee,
 In that thou sparest Absalon thy child. [*Rises.*]
 A beautiful and fair young man is he,
 In all his body is no blemish seen ; 170
 His hair is like the wire of David's harp,
 That twines about his bright and ivory neck ;

In Israel is not such a goodly man ;
And here I bring him to entreat for grace.

Enter ABSALON with JOAB.

Dav. Hast thou slain [Amnon] in the fields of
Hazor——

Ah, Absalon, my son ! ah, my son, Absalon !

But wherefore do I vex thy spirit so ?

Live, and return from Gesur to thy house ;

Return from Gesur to Jerusalem :

What boots it to be bitter to thy soul ?

180

Amnon is dead, and Absalon survives.

Abs. Father, I have offended Israel,

I have offended David and his house ;

For Thamar's wrong hath Absalon misdome :

But David's heart is free from sharp revenge,

And Joab hath got grace for Absalon.

Dav. Depart with me, you men of Israel,

You that have followed Rabbah with the sword,

And ransack Amnon's richest treasuries.—

Live, Absalon, my son, live once in peace :

190

Peace [be] with thee, and with Jerusalem !

[*Exeunt*¹ DAVID and his train, and JOAB.

Manet ABSALON.

Abs. David is gone, and Absalon remains,
Flowering in pleasant spring-time of his youth :

¹ Old ed. "*Exeunt omnes.*"

Why liveth Absalon and is not honoured
 Of tribes and elders and the mightiest ones,
 That round about his temples he may wear
 Garlands and wreaths set on with reverence ;
 That every one that hath a cause to plead
 Might come to Absalon and call for right ?
 Then in the gates of Sion would I sit, 200
 And publish laws in great Jerusalem ;
 And not a man should live in all the land
 But Absalon would do him reason's due :
 Therefore I shall address me, as I may,
 To love the men and tribes of Israel. [Exit.

[SCENE VIII.]

Enter DAVID, ITHAY, SADOC, AHIMAAS, JONATHAN,
with others ; DAVID *barefoot, with some loose covering*
over his head ; and all mourning.

Dav. Proud lust, the bloodiest traitor to our souls,
 Whose greedy throat nor earth, air, sea, or heaven,
 Can glut or satisfy with any store,
 Thou art the cause these torments suck my blood,
 Piercing with venom of thy poisoned eyes
 The strength and marrow of my tainted bones.
 To punish Pharaoh and his cursèd host,
 The waters shrink ¹ at great Adonai's voice,
 And sandy bottom of the sea appeared,
 Offering his service at his servant's feet ; 10

¹ Dyce corrects this to "shrunk."

And, to inflict a plague on David's sin,
 He makes his bowels traitors to his breast,
 Winding about his heart with mortal gripes.
 Ah, Absalon, the wrath of heaven inflames
 Thy scorchèd bosom with ambitious¹ heat,
 And Satan sets thee on a lofty² tower,
 Showing thy thoughts the pride of Israel,
 Of choice to cast thee on her ruthless stones!—
 Weep with me, then, ye sons of Israel;
 Lie down with David, and with David mourn;²⁰
 Before the Holy One that sees our hearts;

[He lies down, and all the rest after him.

Season this heavy soil with showers of tears,
 And fill the face of every flower with dew;
 Weep, Israel, for David's soul dissolves,
 Lading the fountains of his drownèd eyes,
 And pours her substance on the senseless earth.

Sa. Weep, Israel; O, weep for David's soul,
 Strewing the ground with hair and garments torn,
 For tragic witness of your hearty woes!

Ahi. O, would our eyes were conduits to our hearts,
 And that our hearts were seas of liquid blood,³¹
 To pour in streams upon this holy mount,
 For witness we would die for David's woes

Jonath. Then should this Mount of Olives seem a
 plain
 Drowned with a sea, that with our sighs should roar,
 And, in the murmur of his mounting waves,

¹ Qy. "ambition's" ?
 VOL. II.

² So Dyce.—Old ed. "lustic."
 D

Report our bleeding sorrows to the heavens,
For witness we would die for David's woes.

Ith. Earth cannot weep enough for David's woes :
Then weep, you heavens, and, all you clouds, dissolve,
That piteous stars may see our miseries, 40
And drop their golden tears upon the ground,
For witness how they weep for David's woes.

Sa. Now let my sovereign raise his prostrate bones,
And mourn not as a faithless man would do ;
But be assured that Jacob's righteous God,
That promised never to forsake your throne,
Will still be just and pure in his vows.

Dav. Sadoc, high-priest, preserver of the ark,
Whose sacred virtue keeps the chosen crown, 50
I know my God is spotless in his vows,
And that these hairs shall greet my grave in peace :
But that my son should wrong his tendered soul,
And fight against his father's happiness,
Turns all my hopes into despair of him,
And that despair feeds all my veins with grief.

Ith. Think of it, David, as a fatal plague
Which grief preserveth, but preventeth not ;
And turn thy drooping eyes upon the troops
That, of affection to thy worthiness, 60
Do swarm about the person of the king :
Cherish their valours and their zealous loves
With pleasant looks and sweet encouragements.

Dav. Methinks the voice of Ithay fills mine ears.

Ith. Let not the voice of Ithay loathe thine ears,
Whose heart would balm thy bosom with his tears.

Dav. But wherefore go'st thou to the wars with
us?

Thou art a stranger here in Israel,
And son to Achis, mighty King of Gath ;
Therefore return, and with thy father stay :
Thou cam'st but yesterday ; and should I now
Let thee partake these troubles here with us ?
Keep both thyself and all thy soldiers safe :
Let me abide the hazards of these arms,
And God requite the friendship thou hast showed.

Ith. As sure as Israel's God gives David life,
What place or peril shall contain the king,
The same will Ithay share in life and death.

Dav. Then, gentle Ithay, be thou still with us,
A joy to David, and a grace to Israel.—
Go, Sadoc, now, and bear the ark of God
Into the great Jerusalem again :
If I find favour in his gracious eyes,
Then will he lay his hand upon my heart
Yet once again before I visit death ;
Giving it strength, and virtue to mine eyes,
To taste the comforts and behold the form
Of his fair ark and holy tabernacle :
But, if he say, " My wonted love is worn,
And I have no delight in David now,"
Here lie I armèd with an humble heart
T' embrace the pains that anger shall impose,
And kiss the sword my lord shall kill me with.
Then, Sadoc, take Ahimaas thy son,
With Jonathan son to Abiathar ;

And in these fields will I repose myself,
Till they return from you some certain news.

Sa. Thy servants will with joy obey the king,
And hope to cheer his heart with happy news.

[*Exeunt*¹ *SADOC, AHIMAAS, and JONATHAN.*

Ith. Now that it be no grief unto the king, 100
Let me for good inform his majesty,
That, with unkind and graceless Absalon,
Achitophel your auncient counsellor
Directs the state of this rebellion.

Dav. Then doth it aim with danger at my crown.—
[*Kneels*²] O thou, that hold'st his raging bloody³ bound
Within the circle of the silver moon,
That girds earth's centre with his watery scarf,
Limit the counsel of Achitophel,
No bounds extending to my soul's distress, 110
But turn his wisdom into foolishness!

Enter CUSAY with his coat turned and head covered.

Cu. Happiness and honour to my lord the king!

Dav. What happiness or honour may betide
His state that toils in my extremities?

Cu. O, let my gracious sovereign cease these griefs,
Unless he wish his servant Cusay's death,
Whose life depends upon my lord's relief!
Then let my presence with my sighs perfume
The pleasant closet of my sovereign's soul.

¹ Old ed. "Exit."

² Not marked in old ed.

³ Very corrupt.—*Qy.* "sea's ranging body bound"? That *raging* is a misprint for *ranging* I am convinced; but the rest is dark.

Dav. No, Cusay, no; thy presence unto me
 Will be a burden, since I tender thee, 120
 And cannot brook ¹ thy sighs for David's sake:
 But if thou turn to fair Jerusalem,
 And say to Absalon, as thou hast been
 A trusty friend unto his father's seat,
 So thou wilt be to him, and call him king,
 Achitophel's counsel may be brought to naught.
 Then having Sadoc and Abiathar,
 All three may learn the secrets of my son,
 Sending the message by Ahimaas, 130
 And friendly Jonathan, who both are there.

[*Cu.*] Then rise, referring the success to heaven.

Dav. [*rising*] Cusay, I rise; though with unwieldy bones
 I carry arms against my Absalon. [*Exeunt.*]

[SCENE IX.]

ABSALON, AMASA, ACHITOPHEL, *with the Concubines of*
 DAVID, *and others, in great state; ABSALON crowned.*

Abs. Now you that were my father's concubines,
 Liquor to his inchaste and lustful fire,
 Have seen his honour shaken in his house,
 Which I possess in sight of all the world;
 I bring ye forth for foils to my renown,
 And to eclipse the glory of your king,
 Whose life is with his honour fast enclosed
 Within the entrails of a jetty cloud,

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. "breake."

Whose dissolution shall pour down in showers
 The substance of his life and swelling pride : 10
 Then shall the stars light earth with rich aspects,
 And heaven shall burn in love with Absalon,
 Whose beauty will suffice to chase¹ all mists,
 And clothe the sun's sphere with a triple fire,
 Sooner than his clear eyes should suffer stain,
 Or be offended with a lowering day.

First Conc. Thy father's honour, graceless Absalon,
 And ours thus beaten with thy violent arms,
 Will cry for vengeance to the host of heaven,
 Whose power is ever armed against the proud, 20
 And will dart plagues at thy aspiring head
 For doing this disgrace to David's throne.

Second Conc. To David's throne, to David's holy throne,
 Whose sceptre angels guard with swords of fire,
 And sit as eagles on his conquering fist,
 Ready to prey upon his enemies :
 Then think not thou, the captain of his foes,
 Wert thou much swifter than Azahell² was,
 That could outpace the nimble-footed roe,
 To scape the fury of their thumping beaks 30
 Or dreadful scope³ of their commanding wings.

Ach. Let not my lord the King of Israel
 Be angry with a silly woman's threats ;

¹ Old ed. "chast."

² "'And there were three sons of Zeruiah there, Joab, and Abishai, and Asahel: and Asahel was as light of foot as a wild roe.' *Sec. Samuel*, ii. 18."—*Dyce*.

³ "Qy, 'Swoop'?"—*P. A. Daniel*.

But, with the pleasure he hath erst enjoyed,
Turn them into their cabinets again,
Till David's conquest be their overthrow.

Abs. Into your bowers, ye daughters of disdain,
Gotten by fury of unbridled lust,
And wash your couches with your mourning tears,
For grief that David's kingdom is decayed. 40

First Conc. No, Absalon, his kingdom is enchained
Fast to the finger of great Jacob's God,
Which will not loose it for a rebel's love. [*Exeunt.*]

Ama. If I might give advice unto the king,
These concubines should buy their taunts with blood.

Abs. Amasa, no ; but let thy martial sword
Empty the veins¹ of David's armèd men,
And let these foolish women scape our hands
To recompense the shame they have sustained.
First, Absalon was by the trumpet's sound 50
Proclaimed through Hebron King of Israel ;
And now is set in fair Jerusalem
With complète state and glory of a crown :
Fifty fair footmen by my chariot run,
And to the air whose rupture rings my fame,
Where'er I ride, they offer reverence.
Why should not Absalon, that in his face
Carries the final purpose of his God,
That is, to work him grace in Israel,
Endeavour to achieve with all his strength 60
The state that most may satisfy his joy,

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. "paines."

Keeping his statutes and his covenants pure?
 His thunder is entangled in my hair,
 And with my beauty is his lightning quenched:
 I am the man he made to glory in,
 When by the errors of my father's sin
 He lost the path that led into the land
 Wherewith our chosen ancestors were blessed.

Enter CUSAY.

Cu. Long may the beauteous King of Israel live,
 To whom the people do by thousands swarm! 70

Abs. What meaneth Cusay so to greet his foe?
 Is this the love thou show'st¹ to David's soul,
 To whose assistance thou hast vowed thy life?
 Why leav'st thou him in this extremity?

Cu. Because the Lord and Israel chooseth thee;
 And as before I served thy father's turn
 With counsel acceptable in his sight,
 So likewise will I now obey his son.

Abs. Then welcome, Cusay, to King Absalon.—
 And now, my lords and loving counsellors, 80
 I think it time to exercise our arms
 Against forsaken David and his host.
 Give counsel first, my good Achitophel,
 What times and orders we may best observe
 For prosperous manage of these high exploits.

Ach. Let me choose out twelve thousand valiant men:
 And, while the night hides with her sable mists

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. "shewdst."

The close endeavours cunning soldiers use,
 I will assault thy discontented sire ;
 And, while with weakness of their weary arms, 90
 Surcharged with toil, to shun thy sudden power,
 The people fly in huge disordered troops
 To save their lives, and leave the king alone,
 Then will I smite him with his latest wound,
 And bring the people to thy feet in peace.

Abs. Well hath Achitophel given his advice.
 Yet let us hear what Cusay counsels us,
 Whose great experience is well worth the ear.

Cu. Though wise Achitophel be much more meet
 To purchase hearing with my lord the king, 100
 For all his former counsels, than myself,
 Yet, not offending Absalon or him,
 This time it is not good nor worth pursuit ;
 For, well thou knowest, thy father's men are strong,
 Chafing as she-bears robbèd of their whelps :
 Besides, the king himself a valiant man,
 Trained up in feats and stratagems of war ;
 And will not, for prevention of the worst,
 Lodge with the common soldiers in the field ;
 But now, I know, his wonted policies 110
 Have taught him lurk within some secret cave,
 Guarded with all his stoutest soldiers ;
 Which, if the forefront of his battle faint,
 Will yet give out that Absalon doth fly,
 And so thy soldiers be discouragèd :
 David himself withal, whose angry heart
 Is as a lion's letted of his walk,

Will fight himself, and all his men to one,
 Before a few shall vanquish him by fear.
 My counsel therefore is, with trumpet's sound 120
 To gather men from Dan to Bersabe,
 That they may march in number like sea-sands,
 That nestle close in [one] another's neck :
 So shall we come upon him in our strength,
 Like to the dew that falls in showers from heaven,
 And leave him not a man to march withal.
 Besides, if any city succour him,
 The numbers of our men shall fetch us ropes,
 And we will pull it down the river's stream,
 That not a stone be left to keep us out. 130

Abs. What says my lord to Cusay's counsel now?
Ama. I fancy Cusay's counsel better far
 Than that is given us from Achitophel ;
 And so, I think, doth every soldier here.
All. Cusay's counsel is better than Achitophel's.
Abs. Then march we after Cusay's counsel all :
 Sound trumpets through the bounds of Israel,
 And muster all the men will serve the king,
 That Absalon may glut his longing soul
 With sole fruition of his father's crown. 140

[*Exeunt all except* ACHITOPHEL *and* CUSAY.]
Ach. [*aside.*]¹ Ill shall they fare that follow thy at-
 tempts,
 That scorns the counsel of Achitophel. [*Exit.*]¹

¹ Not marked in old ed.

Restat CUSAY.

Cu. Thus hath the power of Jacob's jealous God
Fulfilled his servant David's drifts by me,
And brought Achitophel's advice to scorn.

Enter SADC, ABIATHAR, AHIMAAS, and JONATHAN.

Sa. God save Lord Cusay, and direct his zeal
To purchase David's conquest 'gainst his son!

Abi. What secrets hast thou gleaned from Absalon?

Cu. These, sacred priests that bear the ark of God :—
Achitophel advised him in the night 150

To let him choose twelve thousand fighting men,
And he would come on David at unwares,
While he was weary with his violent toil :

But I advised to get a greater host,
And gather men from Dan to Bersabe,
To come upon him strongly in the fields.

Then send Ahimaas and Jonathan
To signify these secrets to the king,
And will ¹ him not to stay this night abroad ;

But get him over Jordan presently, 160
Lest he and all his people kiss the sword.

Sa. Then go, Ahimaas and Jonathan,
And straight convey this message to the king.

Ahi. Father, we will, if Absalon's chief spies
Prevent not this device, and stay us here. [*Exeunt.*

¹ Desire.

[SCENE X.]

SEMEI *solus.*

Sem. The man of Israel that hath ruled as king,
 Or rather as the tyrant of the land,
 Bolstering his hateful head upon the throne
 That God unworthily hath blessed him with,
 Shall now, I hope, lay it as low as hell,
 And be deposed from his detested chair.
 O, that my bosom could by nature bear
 A sea of poison, to be poured upon
 His cursèd head that sacred balm hath graced
 And consecrated King of Israel! 10
 Or would my breath were made the smoke of hell,
 Infected with the sighs of damnèd souls,
 Or with the reeking of that serpent's gorge
 That feeds on adders, toads, and venomous roots,
 That, as I opened my revenging lips
 To curse the shepherd for his tyranny,
 My words might cast rank poison to his pores,
 And make his swoln and rankling sinews crack,
 Like to the combat blows that break the clouds
 When Jove's stout champions fight [in air ¹] with fire. 20
 See where he cometh that my soul abhors!
 I have prepared my pocket full of stones
 To cast at him, mingled with earth and dust,
 Which, bursting with disdain, I greet him with.

¹ Bracketed words added by P. A. Daniel.

DAVID, JOAB, ABISAI, ITHAY, *with others.*

Come forth, thou murderer and wicked man :
 The lord hath brought upon thy curséd head
 The guiltless blood of Saul and all his sons,
 Whose royal throne thy baseness hath usurped ;
 And, to revenge it deeply on thy soul,
 The Lord hath given the kingdom to thy son, 30
 And he shall wreak the traitorous wrongs of Saul :
 Even as thy sin hath still importuned heaven,
 So shall thy murders and adultery
 Be punished in the sight of Israel,
 As thou deservest, with blood, with death, and hell.
 Hence,¹ murderer, hence ! [*He throws at him.*]

Abis. Why doth [t]his dead dog curse my lord the
 king ?

Let me alone to take away his head.

Dav. Why meddleth thus the son of Zerua
 To interrupt the action of our God ? 40
 Semei useth me with this reproach
 Because the Lord hath sent him to reprove
 The sins of David, printed in his brows
 With blood, that blusheth for his conscience' guilt ;
 Who dares, then, ask him why he curseth me ?

Sem. If, then, thy conscience tell thee thou hast
 sinned,
 And that thy life is odious to the world,
 Command thy followers to shun thy face ;

¹ Old ed. "*Hence murtherer, hence, he throw at him,*"—printed in italics as a stage-direction.

And by thyself here make away thy soul,
That I may stand and glory in thy shame. 50

Dav. I am not desperate, Semei, like thyself,
But trust unto the covenant of my God,
Founded on mercy, with repentance built,
And finished with the glory of my soul.

Sem. A murderer, and hope for mercy in thy end !
Hate and destruction sit upon thy brows
To watch the issue of thy damnèd ghost,
Which with thy latest gasp they'll take and tear,
Hurling in every pain of hell a piece.
Hence, murderer, thou shame to Israel, 60
Foul lecher, drunkard, plague to heaven and earth !

[*He throws at him.*]

Joab. What, is it piety in David's thoughts,
So to abhor from laws of policy
In this extremity of his distress,
To give his subjects cause of carelessness ?
Send hence the dog with sorrow to his grave.

Dav. Why should the sons of Zeruia ¹ seek to check
His spirit, which the Lord hath thus inspired ?
Behold, my son which issued from my flesh,
With equal fury seeks to take my life : 70
How much more then the son of Jemini,
Chiefly since he doth naught but God's command ?
It may be, he will look on me this day

¹ Dyce suggests that the words "seek to" are an interpolation ; but I suspect that "Zeruia" (both here and in l. 39) is to be pronounced as a trisyllable.

With gracious eyes, and for his cursing bless
The heart of David in his bitterness.

Sem. What, dost thou fret my soul with sufferance?
Oh, that the souls of Isboseth and Abner,
Which thou sent'st swimming to their graves in blood,
With wounds fresh bleeding, gasping for revenge,
Were here to execute my burning hate ! 80
But I will hunt thy foot with curses still :
Hence, monster, murderer, mirror of contempt !
[*He throws dust again.*]

Enter AHIMAAS and JONATHAN.

Ahi. Long life to David, to his enemies death !

Dav. Welcome, Ahimaas and Jonathan :
What news sends Cusay to thy lord the king ?

Ahi. Cusay would wish my [sovereign] lord the king
To pass the river Jordan presently,
Lest he and all his people perish here ;
For wise Achitophel hath counselled Absalon
To take advantage of your weary arms, 90
And come this night upon you in the fields.
But yet the Lord hath made his counsel scorn,
And Cusay's policy with praise preferred ;
Which was to number every Israelite,
And so assault you in their pride of strength.

Jonath. Abiathar besides entreats the king
To send his men of war against his son,
And hazard not his person in the field.

Dav. Thanks to Abiathar, and to you both,

And to my Cusay, whom the Lord requite ; 100
 But ten times treble thanks to his soft hand
 Whose pleasant touch hath made my heart to dance,
 And play him praises in my zealous breast,
 That turned the counsel of Achitophel
 After the prayers of his servant's lips.
 Now will we pass the river all this night,
 And in the morning sound the voice of war,
 The voice of bloody and unkindly war.

Joab. Then tell us how thou wilt divide thy men,
 And who shall have the special charge herein. 110

Dav. Joab, thyself shall for thy charge conduct
 The first third part of all my valiant men ;
 The second shall Abisai's valour lead ;
 The third fair Ithay, which I most should grace
 For comfort he hath done to David's woes ;
 And I myself will follow in the midst.

Ith. That let not David ; for, though we should fly,
 Ten thousand of us were not half so much
 Esteemed with David's enemies as himself :
 Thy people, loving thee, deny thee this. 120

Dav. What seems them best, then, that will David
 do.

But now, my lords and captains, hear his voice
 That never yet pierced piteous heaven in vain ;
 Then let it not slip lightly through your ears ;—
 For my sake spare the young man Absalon.
 Joab, thyself didst once use friendly words
 To reconcile my heart incensed to him ;
 If, then, thy love be to thy kinsman sound,

And thou wilt prove a perfit¹ Israelite,
 Friend him with deeds, and touch no hair of him,— 130
 Not that fair hair with which the wanton winds
 Delight to play, and loves to make it curl,
 Wherein the nightingales would build their nests,
 And make sweet bowers in every golden tress
 To sing their lover every night asleep :
 O, spoil not, Joab, Jove's fair ornaments,
 Which he hath sent to solace David's soul !
 The best, ye see, my lords, are swift to sin ;
 To sin our feet are washed with milk of roes,
 And dried again with coals of lightening. 140
 O Lord, thou see'st the proudest sin's poor slave,
 And² with his bridle pull'st him to the grave !
 For my sake, then, spare lovely Absalon.

Ith. We will, my lord, for thy sake favour him.

[*Exeunt.*]

[SCENE XI.]

ACHITOPHEL solus with a halter.

Ach. Now hath Achitophel ordered his house,
 And taken leave of every pleasure there :
 Hereon depends Achitophel's delights,

¹ Old form of "perfect."

² This line is hardly intelligible. I should prefer to read "That with his bridle pulls him," &c. A similar emendation was proposed by Collier. (The meaning seems to be "Thou seest the proudest man become the poor slave of sin, that pulls him by sin's bridle to the grave.")

And in this circle must his life be closed.
 The wise Achitophel, whose counsel proved
 Ever as sound for fortunate success
 As if men asked the oracle of God,
 Is now used like the fool of Israel :
 Then set thy angry soul upon her wings,
 And let her fly into the shade of death ; 10
 And for my death let heaven for ever weep,
 Making huge floods upon the land I leave,
 To ravish ¹ them and all their fairest fruits.
 Let all the sighs I breathed for this disgrace,
 Hang on my ² hedges like eternal mists,
 As mourning garments for their master's death.
 Ope, earth, and take thy miserable son
 Into the bowels of thy cursèd womb :
 Once in a surfeit thou didst spew him forth ;
 Now for fell hunger suck him in again, 20
 And be his body poison to thy veins.
 And now, thou hellish instrument of heaven,
 Once execute th' arrest of Jove's just doom,
 And stop his breath ³ that curseth Israel. [Exit.

¹ This word may be right, but I should prefer to read "ravage."—By "them" are to be understood Achitophel's countrymen.

² Quy. "thy" (the word being addressed to the "land I leave," l. 12).

³ So Dyce.—Old ed. "breast."

[SCENE XII.]

ABSALON, AMASA, *with all his train.*

Abs. Now for the crown and throne of Israel,
 To be confirmed with virtue of my sword,
 And writ with David's blood upon the blade.
 Now, Jove, let forth the golden firmament,
 And look on him, with all thy fiery eyes,
 Which thou hast made to give their glories light :
 To show thou lov'st the virtue of thy hand,
 Let fall a wreath of stars upon my head,
 Whose influence may govern Israel
 With state exceeding all her other kings. 10
 Fight, lords and captains, that your sovereign's face
 May shine in honour brighter than the sun ;
 And with the virtue of my beauteous rays
 Make this fair land as fruitful as the fields
 That with sweet milk and honey overflowed.
 God, in the whizzing of a pleasant wind,
 Shall march upon the tops of mulberry-trees,¹
 To cool all breasts that burn with any griefs,
 As whilom he was good to Moyses'² men.
 By day the Lord shall sit within a cloud, 20
 To guide your footsteps to the fields of joy ;
 And in the night a pillar, bright as fire,

¹ " 'And it shall be, when thou shalt hear a sound of going in the tops of the mulberry-trees, that then thou shalt go out to battle: for God is gone first before thee,' &c.—*First Chron.* xiv. 15."—*Dyce.*

² An old form of *Moses*.

Shall go before you, like a second sun,
 Wherein the essence of his godhead is ;
 That day and night you may be brought to peace,
 And never swarve¹ from that delightsome path
 That leads your souls to perfect happiness.
 This shall he do for joy when I am king.
 Then fight, brave captains, that these joys may fly
 Into your bosoms with sweet victory.

20

[*Exeunt.*]

[SCENE XIII.]

The battle ; and ABSALON hangs by the hair.

Abs. What angry angel, sitting in these shades,
 Hath laid his cruel hands upon my hair,
 And holds my body thus 'twixt heaven and earth ?
 Hath Absalon no soldier near his hand
 That may untwine me this unpleasant curl,
 Or wound this tree that ravisheth his lord ?
 O God, behold the glory of thy hand,
 And choicest fruit of nature's workmanship,
 Hang, like a rotten branch, upon this tree,
 Fit for the axe and ready for the fire !
 Since thou withhold'st all ordinary help
 To loose my body from this bond of death,
 O, let my beauty fill these senseless plants
 With sense and power to loose me from this plague,
 And work some wonder to prevent his death
 Whose life thou mad'st a special miracle !

10

¹ An old form of *swerve*.

JOAB *with another Soldier.*

Sold. My Lord, I saw the young Prince Absalon
Hang by the hair upon a shady oak,
And could by no means get himself unloosed.

Joab. Why slew'st thou not the wicked Absalon, 20
That rebel to his father and to heaven,
That so I might have given thee for thy pains
Ten silver shekels¹ and a golden waist?²

Sold. Not for a thousand shekels would I slay
The son of David, whom his father charged,
Nor thou, Abisai, nor the son of Gath,³
Should touch with stroke of deadly violence.
The charge was given in hearing of us all;
And, had I done it, then, I know, thyself,
Before thou wouldst abide the king's rebuke, 30
Wouldst have accused me as a man of death.

Joab. I must not now stand trifling here with thee.

Abs. Help, Joab, help, O, help thy Absalon!
Let not thy angry thoughts be laid in blood,
In blood of him that sometimes nourished thee,
And softened thy sweet heart with friendly love:
O, give me once again my father's sight,
My dearest father and my princely sovereign!
That, shedding tears of blood before his face,
The ground may witness, and the heavens record, 40
My last submission sound and full of ruth.

¹ Old ed. "sickles."

² "i.e., girdle.—The 4to. 'wast.'"—*Dyce.*

³ "i.e., the native of Gath, viz, Ithai (Ittai)."—*Dyce.*

Joab. Rebel to nature, hate to heaven and earth!
 Shall I give help to him that thirsts the soul
 Of his dear father and my sovereign lord?
 Now see, the Lord hath tangled in a tree
 The health and glory of thy stubborn heart,
 And made thy pride curbed with a senseless plant:
 Now, Absalon, how doth the Lord regard
 The beauty whereupon thy hope was built,
 And which thou thought'st his grace did glory in? 50
 Find'st thou not now, with fear of instant death,
 That God affects not any painted shape
 Or goodly personage, when the virtuous soul
 Is stuffed with naught but pride and stubbornness?
 But, preach I to thee, while I should revenge
 Thy cursèd sin that staineth Israel,
 And makes her fields blush with her children's blood?
 Take that as part of thy deservèd plague,
 Which worthily no torment can inflict. [*Stabs him.*¹

Abs. O Joab, Joab, cruel, ruthless Joab! 60
 Herewith thou wound'st thy kingly sovereign's heart,
 Whose heavenly temper hates his children's blood,
 And will be sick, I know, for Absalon.
 O, my dear father, that thy melting eyes
 Might pierce this thicket to behold thy son,
 Thy dearest son, gored with a mortal dart!
 Yet, Joab, pity me: pity my father, Joab;
 Pity his soul's distress that mourns my life,
 And will be dead, I know, to hear my death.

¹ Not marked in old ed.

Joab. If he were so remorseful¹ of thy state,
 Why sent he me against thee with the sword?
 All Joab means to pleasure thee withal
 Is, to despatch thee quickly of thy pain:
 Hold, Absalon, Joab's pity is in this;
 In this, proud Absalon, is Joab's love.

[*Stabs him again, and goes out with Soldier.*²

Abs. Such love, such pity Israel's God send thee,
 And for his love to David pity me!
 Ah, my dear father, see thy bowels bleed;
 See death assault thy dearest Absalon;
 See, pity, pardon, pray for Absalon!

80

Enter five or six Soldiers.

First Sold. See where the rebel in his glory hangs.—
 Where is the virtue of thy beauty, Absalon?
 Will any of us here now fear thy looks,
 Or be in love with that thy golden hair
 Wherein was wrapt rebellion 'gainst thy sire,
 And cords prepared to stop thy father's breath?
 Our captain Joab hath begun to us;
 And here's an end to thee and all thy sins.

[*They*³ *stab him; he dies.*

Come, let us take the beauteous rebel down,
 And in some ditch, amidst this darksome wood,

90

¹ Compassionate.

² The stage-direction in old ed. is simply "He goes out."

³ Not in old ed.

Bury his bulk ¹ beneath a heap of stones,
Whose stony heart did hunt his father's death.

[*Re-*]enter in triumph with drum and ensign, JOAB,
ABISAI, and Soldiers, to ABSALON.

Joab. Well done, tall ² soldiers! take the traitor down,
And in this miry ditch inter his bones,
Covering his hateful breast with heaps of stones.
This shady thicket of dark Ephraim ³
Shall ever lower on his cursèd grave;
Night-ravens and owls shall ring his fatal knell,
And sit exclaiming on his damnèd soul;
There shall they heap their preys of carrion, 100
Till all his grave be clad with stinking bones,
That it may loathe the sense of every man:
So shall his end breed horror to his name,
And to his traitorous fact eternal shame [Exit.

[Third] Chorus.

Chorus. O dreadful precedent of His just doom,
Whose holy heart is never touched with ruth
Of fickle beauty or of glorious shape,
But with the virtue of an upright soul,
Humble and zealous in his inward thoughts,
Though in his person loathsome and deformed!
Now, since this story lends us other store,
To make a third discourse of David's life,

¹ Body.

² Brave.

³ Old ed, "Ephrami."

Adding thereto his most renownèd death,
 And all their deaths that at his death he judged, 10
 Here end we this, and what here wants to please,
 We will supply with treble willingness.¹

[SCENE XIV.]

*Trumpets sound. Enter JOAB, AHIMAAS, CUSAY ; AMASA,
 with all the rest.*

Joab. Soldiers of Israel, and ye sons of Judah,
 That have contended in these irksome broils,
 And ript old Israel's bowels with your swords ;
 The godless general of your stubborn arms
 Is brought by Israel's helper to the grave,
 A grave of shame, and scorn of all the tribes :
 Now, then, to save your honours from the dust,
 And keep your bloods in temper by your bones,
 Let Joab's ensign shroud your manly heads,
 Direct your eyes, your weapons, and your hearts, 10
 To guard the life of David from his foes.
 Error hath masked your much-too-forward minds,

¹ After the chorus in old ed. occurs the following passage, which belonged to some lost or cancelled scene :—

" Absalon with three or foure of his seruants or gentlemen.

Abs. What boots it Absalon, vnhappie Absalon,
 Sighing I say what boots it Absalon,
 To haue disclos'd a farre more worthy wombe

Then "

And you have sinned against the chosen state,
 Against his life, for whom your lives are blessed,
 And followed an usurper to the field ;
 In whose just death your deaths are threatenèd ;
 But Joab pities your disordered souls,
 And therefore offers pardon, peace, and love,
 To all that will be friendly reconciled
 To Israel's weal, to David, and to heaven. 20
 Amasa, thou art leader of the host
 That under Absalon have raised their arms ;
 Then be a captain wise and politic,
 Careful and loving for thy soldiers' lives,
 And lead them to this honourable league.

Ama. I will ; [I will ;] at least, I'll do my best :
 And for the gracious offer thou hast made
 I give thee thanks, as much as for my head.—
 Then, you deceived poor souls of Israel,
 Since now ye see the errors you incurred, 30
 With thanks and due submission be appeased ;
 And as ye see your captain's precedent,
 Here cast we, then, our swords at Joab's feet,
 Submitting with all zeal and reverence
 Our goods and bodies to his gracious hands.

[*The*¹ *rebels kneel.*

Joab. Stand up, and take ye all your swords again :

[*All stand up.*

David and Joab shall be blessed herein.

¹ Old ed. gives the stage-direction " All stand up," which belongs to the next line.

Ahi. Now let me go inform my lord the king
How God hath freed him from his enemies.

Joab. Another time, Ahimaas, not now.— 40
But, Cusay, go thyself, and tell the king
The happy message of our good success.

Cu. I will, my lord, and thank thee for thy grace.
[*Exit* CUSAY.]

Ahi. What if thy servant should go too, my lord?

Joab. What news hast thou to bring since he is gone?

Ahi. Yet do Ahimaas so much content,
That he may run about so sweet a charge. [Exit.]

Joab. Run, if thou wilt; and peace be with thy steps.
Now follow, that you may salute the king
With humble hearts and reconcilèd souls. 50

Ama. We follow, Joab, to our gracious king;
And him our swords shall honour to our deaths.
[*Excunt.*]

[SCENE XV.]

DAVID, BETHSABE, SALOMON, NATHAN, ADONIA,
CHILEAB, *with their train.*

Beth. What means my lord, the lamp of Israel,
From whose bright eyes all eyes receive their light,
To dim the glory of his sweet aspect,¹
And paint his countenance with his heart's distress?
Why should his thoughts retain a sad conceit,

¹ Old ed. "aspects."

When every pleasure kneels before his throne,
 And sues for sweet acceptance with his grace?
 Take but your lute, and make the mountains dance,
 Retrieve the sun's sphere, and restrain the clouds,
 Give ears to trees, make savage lions tame, 10
 Impose still silence to the loudest winds,
 And fill the fairest day with foulest storms :
 Then why should passions of much meaner power
 Bear head against the heart of Israel ?

Dav. Fair Bersabe, thou mightst increase the strength
 Of these thy arguments, drawn from my skill,
 By urging thy sweet sight to my conceits,
 Whose virtue ever served for sacred balm
 To cheer my pinings past all earthly joys :
 But, Bethsabe, the daughter of the Highest, 20
 Whose beauty builds the towers of Israel,
 She that in chains of pearl and unicorn
 Leads at her train the ancient golden world,
 The world that Adam held in paradise,
 Whose breath refineth all infectious airs,
 And makes the meadows smile at her repair,—
 She, she,¹ my dearest Bethsabe,
 Fair Peace, the goddess of our graces here,
 Is fled the streets of fair Jerusalem,
 The fields of Israel, and the heart of David, 30
 Leading my comforts in her golden chains,
 Linked to the life and soul of Absalon.

Beth. Then is the pleasure of my sovereign's heart

¹ Dyce proposed, for the sake of the metre, "She, she, alas!"

So wrapt within the bosom of that son,
That Salomon, whom Israel's God affects,
And gave the name unto him for his love,
Should be no salve to comfort David's soul?

Dav. Salomon, my love, is David's lord ;¹
Our God hath named him lord of Israel :
In him (for that, and since he is thy son,) 40
Must David needs be pleasèd at the heart ;
And he shall surely sit upon my throne.
But Absalon, the beauty of my bones,
Fair Absalon, the counterfeit² of love,
Sweet Absalon, the image of content,
Must claim a portion in his father's care,
And be in life and death King David's son.

Nath. Yet, as my lord hath said, let Salomon reign,
Whom God in naming hath anointed king.
Now is he apt to learn th' eternal laws, 50
Whose knowledge being rooted in his youth
Will beautify his age with glorious fruits ;
While Absalon, incensed with graceless pride,
Usurps and stains the kingdom with his sin :
Let Salomon be made thy staff of age,
Fair Israel's rest, and honour of thy race.

Dav. Tell me, my Salomon, wilt thou embrace
Thy father's precepts gravèd in thy heart,
And satisfy my zeal to thy renown
With practice of such sacred principles 60
As shall concern the state of Israel ?

¹ Quy. "is David's lovèd son"?

² Portrait,

Sal. My royal father, if the heavenly zeal,
 Which for my welfare feeds upon your soul,
 Were not sustained with virtue of mine own ;
 If the sweet accents of your cheerful voice
 Should not each hour¹ beat upon mine ears
 As sweetly as the breath of heaven to him
 That gaspeth scorched with the summer's sun ;
 I should be guilty of unpardoned sin,
 Fearing the plague of heaven and shame of earth : 70
 But since I vow myself to learn the skill
 And holy secrets of his mighty hand
 Whose cunning tunes the music of my soul,
 It would content me, father, first to learn
 How the Eternal framed the firmament ;
 Which bodies lend² their influence by fire,
 And which are filled with hoary winter's ice ;
 What sign is rainy, and what star is fair ;
 Why by the rules of true proportion
 The year is still divided into months, 80
 The months to days, the days to certain hours ;
 What fruitful race shall fill the future world ;
 Or for what time shall this round building stand ;
 What magistrates, what kings shall keep in awe
 Men's minds with bridles of th' eternal law.
Dav. Wade not too far, my boy, in waves too³ deep :
 The feeble eyes of our aspiring thoughts

¹ Old ed, "hower." (The word is here, as frequently, a dissyllable.)

² So Dyce.—Old ed. "lead" (which might perhaps be defended).

³ Dyce corrects this to "so."

Behold things present, and record things past ;
 But things to come exceed our human reach,
 And are not painted yet in angels' eyes : 90
 For those, submit thy sense, and say—"Thou power,
 That now art framing of the future world,
 Know'st all to come, not by the course of heaven,
 By frail conjectures of inferior signs,
 By monstrous floods, by flights and flocks of birds,
 By bowels of a sacrificèd beast,
 Or by the figures of some hidden art ;
 But by a true and natural presage,
 Laying the ground and perfect architect ¹
 Of all our actions now before thine eyes, 100
 From Adam to the end of Adam's seed :
 O heaven, protect my weakness with thy strength !
 So look on me that I may view thy face,
 And see these secrets written in thy brows.
 O sun, come dart thy rays upon my moon !
 That now mine eyes, eclipsèd to the earth,
 May brightly be refined and shine to heaven ;
 Transform me from this flesh, that I may live,
 Before my death, regenerate with thee.
 O thou great God, ravish my earthly sprite ! 110
 That for the time a more than human skill
 May feed the organons of all my sense ;
 That, when I think, thy thoughts may be my guide,

¹ "Qy. 'archi'ture.' Cf. Brome's *Novella*, end of Act i. Sc. ii. :—

'I have found ground to build on ; but there lacks
 Much rewing, squaring, joynting, to make sure,
 Against all stormes, our lofty *Archit'ure*.'—*P. A. Daniel*.

Dyce suggests "archetype."

And, when I speak, I may be made by choice
 The perfect echo of thy heavenly voice."
 Thus say, my son, and thou shalt learn them all.

Sal. A secret fury ravisheth my soul,
 Lifting my mind above her human bounds ;
 And, as the eagle, rousèd from her stand
 With violent hunger, towering in the air, 120
 Seizeth her feathered prey, and thinks to feed,
 But seeing then a cloud beneath her feet,
 Lets fall the fowl, and is emboldenèd
 With eyes intentive to bedare¹ the sun,
 And styeth² close unto his stately sphere ;
 So Salomon, mounted on the burning wings
 Of zeal divine, lets fall his mortal food,
 And cheers his senses with celestial air,
 Treads in the golden starry labyrinth,
 And holds his eyes fixed on Jehovah's brows. 130
 Good father, teach me further what to do.

Nath. See, David, how his haughty spirit mounts,
 Even now of height to wield a diadem :
 Then make him promise that he may succeed,
 And rest old Israel's bones from broils of war.

Dav. Nathan, thou prophet, sprung from Jesse's root,
 I promise thee and lovely Bethsabe,
 My Salomon shall govern after me.

Beth. He that hath touched thee with this righteous
 thought
 Preserve the harbour of thy thoughts in peace ! 140

¹ Defy.

² "Sty" = soar.

Enter Messenger.

Mess. My lord, thy servants of the watch have seen
One running hitherward from forth the wars.

Dav. If he be come alone, he bringeth news.

Mess. Another hath thy servant seen, my lord,
Whose running much resembles Sadoc's son.

Dav. He is a good man, and good tidings brings.

Enter AHIMAAS.

Ahi. Peace and content be with my lord the king,
Whom Israel's God hath bless'd with victory.

Dav. Tell me, Ahimaas, lives my Absalon?

Ahi. I saw a troop of soldiers gather'd, 150
But know not what the tumult might import.

Dav. Stand by, until some other may inform
The heart of David with a happy truth.

Enter CUSAY.

Cu. Happiness and honour live with David's soul,
Whom God hath blessed with conquest of his foes.

Dav. But Cusay, lives the young man Absalon?

Cu. The stubborn enemies to David's peace,
And all that cast their darts against his crown,
Fare ever like the young man Absalon!
For as he rid the woods of Ephraim, 160
Which fought for thee as much as all thy men,

His hair was tangled in a shady oak ;
 And hanging there, by Joab and his men
 Sustained the stroke of well-deservèd death.

Dav. Hath Absalon sustained the stroke of death ?
 Die, David, for the death of Absalon,
 And make these cursèd news the bloody darts
 That through his bowels rip thy wretched breast.
 Hence, David, walk the solitary woods,
 And in some cedar's shade the thunder slew, 170
 And fire from heaven hath made his branches black,
 Sit mourning the decease of Absalon :
 Against the body of that blasted plant
 In thousand shivers break thy ivory lute,
 Hanging thy stringless harp upon his boughs ;
 And through the hollow sapless sounding trunk
 Bellow the torments that perplex thy soul.
 There let the winds sit sighing till they burst ;
 Let tempest, muffled with a cloud of pitch,
 Threaten the forests with her hellish face, 180
 And, mounted fiercely on her iron wings,
 Rend up the wretched engine by the roots
 That held my dearest Absalon to death.
 Then let them toss my broken lute to heaven,
 Even to his hands that beats me with the strings,
 To show how sadly his poor shepherd sings.

[*He goes to his pavilion and sits close a while.*]

Beth. Die, Bethsabe, to see thy David mourn,
 To hear his tunes of anguish and of hell.
 O, help, my David, help thy Bethsabe,

[*She kneels down.*]

Whose heart is piercèd with thy breathy swords,¹ 190
 And bursts with burden of ten thousand griefs !
 Now sits thy sorrows sucking of my blood :
 O, that it might be poison to their powers,
 And that their lips might draw my bosom dry,
 So David's love might ease him, though she die !

Nath. These violent passions come not from above ;
 David and Bethsabe offend the Highest,
 To mourn in this immeasurable sort.

Dav. O Absalon, Absalon ! O my son, my son !
 Would God that I had died for Absalon ! 200
 But he is dead ; ah, dead ! Absalon is dead :
 And David lives to die for Absalon.

[He looks forth, and at the end sits close again.

Enter JOAB, ABISAI, ITHAY, with their train.

Joab. Why lies the queen so prostrate on the ground ?
 Why is this company so tragic-hued ?
 Why is the king now absent from his men,
 And marcheth not in triumph through the gates ?

[He unfolds the pavilion.

David, awake ; if sleep have shut thine eyes,
 Sleep of affection, that thou canst not see
 The honour offered to the victor's head :
 Joab brings conquest piercèd on his spear, 210
 And joy from all the tribes of Israel.

Dav. Thou man of blood, thou sepulchre of death,

¹ "Breathy swords" is a horrible expression ; but Mitford's correction "breathed words" is insipid. "Thy breath's keen swords" would be tolerable,—but it would not be what Peele wrote.

Whose marble breast intomb[s] my bowels quick,
 Did I not charge thee, nay, entreat thy hand,
 Even for my sake, to spare my Absalon?
 And hast thou now, in spite of David's health,
 And scorn to do my heart some happiness,
 Given him the sword and spilt his purple soul?

Joab. What, irks it David, that he victor breathes,
 That Juda and the fields of Israel 220
 Should cleanse their faces from their children's blood?
 What, art thou weary of thy royal rule?
 Is Israel's throne a serpent in thine eyes,
 And he that set thee there so far from thanks,
 That thou must curse his servant for his sake?
 Hast thou not said that, as the morning light,
 The cloudless morning, so should be thine house,
 And not as flowers by the brightest rain
 Which grow up quickly and as quickly fades?
 Hast thou not said, the wicked are as thorns, 230
 That cannot be preservèd¹ with the hand,

¹ "Qy. 'repressèd'?"—The passage of Scripture to which our author here alludes is as follows:

'And he shall be as the light of the morning, when the sun riseth, even a morning without clouds; as the tender grass springing out of the earth by clear shining after rain.

'Although my house be not so with God; yet he hath made with me an everlasting covenant, ordered in all things and sure: for this is all my salvation, and all my desire, although he make it not to grow.

'But the sons of Belial shall be all of them as thorns thrust away, because they cannot be taken with hands [The Vulgate '*quæ non tolluntur manibus*']:

'But the man that shall touch them must be fenced with iron and the staff of a spear,' &c.

Sec. Samuel, xxiii. 4, sqq.—*Dyce.*

And that the man shall touch them must be armed
With coats of iron and garments made of steel,
Or with the shaft of a defencèd spear?
And art thou angry he is now cut off
That led the guiltless swarming to their deaths,
And was more wicked than an host of men?
Advance thee from thy melancholy den,
And deck thy body with thy blissful robes,
Or, by the Lord that sways the heaven I swear, 240
I'll lead thine armies to another king
Shall cheer them for their princely chivalry,
And not sit daunted, frowning in the dark,
When his fair looks, with oil and wine refreshed,
Should dart into their bosoms gladsome beams,
And fill their stomachs with triumphant feasts;
That when elsewhere stern war shall sound his trump,
And call another battle to the field,
Fame still may bring thy valiant soldiers home,
And for their service happily confess 250
She wanted worthy trumps to sound their prowess:
Take thou this course and live; refuse and die.

Abis. Come, brother, let him sit there till he sink;
Some other shall advance the name of Joab.

[*Offers to go out.*]

Beth. O, stay, my lords, stay! David mourns no more,
But riseth to give honour to your acts.

Dav. [*Stay.—He riseth up.*] Then happy art thou,
David's fairest son,
That, freed from the yoke of earthly toils,
And séquester'd from sense of human sins,

Thy soul shall joy the sacred cabinet 260
 Of those divine ideas that present
 Thy changèd spirit with a heaven of bliss.
 Then thou art gone ; ah, thou art gone, my son !
 To heaven, I hope, my Absalon is gone :
 Thy soul there placed in honour of the saints,
 Or angels clad with immortality,
 Shall reap a sevenfold grace for all thy griefs ;
 Thy eyes, now no more eyes but shining stars,
 Shall deck the flaming heavens with novel lamps ;
 There shalt thou taste the drink of seraphins, 270
 And cheer thy feelings with archangels' food ;
 Thy day of rest, thy holy sabbath-day,
 Shall be eternal ; and, the curtain drawn,
 Thou shalt behold thy sovereign face to face,
 With wonder, knit in triple unity,
 Unity infinite and innumerable.—
 Courage, brave captains ! Joab's tale hath stirred,
 And made the suit of Israel preferred.

Joab. Bravely resolved, and spoken like a king :
 Now may old Israel and his daughters sing. 280

[*Excunt.*]

FINIS.

SIR CLYOMON AND SIR CLAMYDES.

The Historie of the two valiant Knights, Syr Clyomon Knight of the Golden Sheeld, sonne to the King of Denmarke: And Clamydes the white Knight, sonne to the King of Suauia. As it hath bene sundry times Acted by her Maiestie Players. London Printed by Thomas Creede. 1599. 4to.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.¹

ALEXANDER THE GREAT.
KING OF DENMARK.
CLYOMON, *his son*.
KING OF SUAVIA.
CLAMYDES, *his son*.
THRASELLUS, *King of Norway*.
MUSTANTIUS, *brother to the King of the Isle of Strange
Marshes*.
BRYAN SANS-FOY.
SUBTLE SHIFT.
CORIN, *a shepherd*.
Boatswain.
Lords, Knights, Soldiers, Servants.

QUEEN OF DENMARK.
JULIANA, *her daughter*.
QUEEN, *widow of Patranus, King of the Isle of Strange
Marshes*.
NERONIS, *her daughter*.
Two Ladies.

PROVIDENCE.
RUMOUR.

¹ There is no list of characters in old ed.

THE PROLOGUE.

As lately lifting up the leaves of worthy writers' works,
Wherein the noble acts and deeds of many hidden lurks,
Our author he hath found the glass of glory shining
bright,

Wherein their lives are to be seen which honour did
delight,

To be a lantern unto those which daily do desire

Apollo's garland by desert in time for to aspire ;

Wherein the froward chances oft of fortune you shall see,

Wherein the cheerful countenance of good successes be,

Wherein true lovers findeth joy with hugy heaps of care,

Wherein, as well as famous facts, ignominious¹ placèd

are,

10

Wherein the just reward of both is manifestly shown,

That virtue from the root of vice might openly be

known ;

And doubting naught, right courteous all, in your accus-

tom'd wont

And gentle ears, our author he is prest² to bide the

brunt

¹ *i.e.* "ignominious."—*Dyce.* (*Ignomy* for *ignominy* is frequently found. We have it in sc. iii. l. 31.)

² Ready.

Of babblers' tongues, to whom he thinks as frustrate all
his toil

As pearls cast ¹ to filthy swine which in the mire do moil.

Well,² what he hath done for your delight, he gave not
me in charge :

The actors come, who shall express the same to you at
large.

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. "taste."

² Dyce prints this word as a line by itself. I follow the old ed.

SIR CLYOMON AND SIR CLAMYDES.

—o—
[SCENE I.]

Enter CLAMYDES.

Clam. As to the weary wandering wights whom waltering¹ waves environ,
No greater joy of joys may be than when from out the ocean
They may behold the altitude of billows to abate,
For to observe the longitude of seas in former rate,
And having then the latitude of sea-room for to pass,
Their joy is greater, through the grief, than erst before
it was;
So likewise I Clamydes,² Prince of Suavia, noble soil,

¹ Weltering.—Cf. *The Misfortunes of Arthur* (Hazlitt's *Dodsley*, iv. 313):—

“ My slender bark shall creep anest the shore
And shun the winds that sweep the *waltering waves*.”

So in *Seneca's Ten Tragedies*, 1581, fo. 62 (verso), “ That *walter* thus in waves of woe ” ; *ibid.* fo. 64 (verso), “ The sailing ship with brazen stem cut not the *waltring* wave.”

² Sometimes the name is to be pronounced (as here) “ Clāmŷdēs,” at other times “ Clāmŷdēs.”

Bringing my bark to Denmark here, to bide the bitter
 broil
 And beating blows of billows high, while raging storms
 did last,
 My griefs were greater than might be, but, tempests
 overpast, 10
 Such gentle calms ensuèd hath as makes my joys¹ more,
 Through terror of the former fear, than erst it was before ;
 So that I sit in safety,² as sea-man under shrouds
 When he perceives the storms be past through vanishing³
 of clouds ;
 For why⁴
 The doubtful care that drave me off, in danger to prevail,
 Is dash'd through bearing lesser brain⁵ and keeping
 under sail,
 So that I have through travail long at last possess'd the
 place
 Whereas⁶ my bark in harbour safe doth pleasures great
 embrace,

¹ Old ed. "ioyes"—which Dr. Brinsley Nicholson takes to be "joyess." ("Joys" is to be pronounced as a dissyllable.—There is no difficulty with the "it" in the next line ; for, as Dyce remarks, "our early writers sometimes apply 'it' to a preceding plural substantive.")

² Equivalent to a trisyllable.

³ So Dyce.—Old ed. "vanquishing."

⁴ "For why" (a frequently recurring expression) = because.—In old ed. "For why" is printed as part of the following line. It is difficult to deal with such extra-metrical words.

⁵ "Bearing lesser brain" is curious and not very intelligible. The common expression "bear a brain" meant—be attentive, be wary. Perhaps in the present passage we might read "bearing *better* brain" (unless the corruption lies in the word "brain").

⁶ Where.

And hath such license limited as heart can seem to ask,
 To go and come, of custom free or any other task : 21
 I mean by Juliana she, that blaze of beauty's breeding,
 And for her noble gifts of grace all other dames exceeding ;
 She hath from bondage set me free, and freed yet still
 bound

To her above all other dames that live upon the ground,
 For, had not she been merciful, my ship had rush'd on
 rocks,

And so decay'd amidst the storms through force of club-
 bish knocks ;

But when she saw the danger great where subject I did
 stand

In bringing of my silly bark full-fraught from out my
 land,

She, like a meek and honest dame,—what should I else
 say more?— 30

Did me permit with full consent to land upon her shore,
 Upon true promise that I would here faithful still remain,
 And that perform which she had vow'd for those that
 should obtain

Her princely person to possess ; which thing to know I
 stay,

And then adventurously for her to pass upon my way :
 Lo where she comes !

Enter JULIANA with a white shield.

Ah peerless dame, my Juliana dear !

Juli. My Clamydes ! of troth, sir prince, to make you
 stay thus here

I proffer too much injury, that's doubtless on my part ;
 But let it no occasion give to breed within your heart
 Mistrust that I should forge or feign with you my love
 in aught. 40

Clam. No, lady, touching you in me doth lodge no
 such a thought,

But thanks for your great courtesy, that would so friendly
 here

In mids of misery receive a foreign stranger mere.¹

But, lady, say what is your will, that it I may perstand.²

Juli. Sir prince,³

Upon a vow who spouseth me must needsly⁴ take in hand
 The flying serpent for to slay, which in the Forest is
 That of Strange Marvels beareth name ; which serpent
 doth not miss,

By daily use, from every coast⁵ that is adjacent there,
 To fetch a virgin-maid, or wife, or else some lady fair,
 To feed his hungry paunch withal, if case he can them
 take ; 51

His nature, lo, it only is of women spoil to make :

Which thing, no doubt, did daunt me much, and made
 me vow indeed,

Who should espouse me for his wife should bring to me
 his head ;

¹ "A foreign stranger *mere*"—one who is wholly a stranger. So again sc. iii. l. 48.

² This word (in the sense of "understand") occurs two or three times in the present play ; but I do not remember to have met it elsewhere.

³ "Sir prince . . . take in hand"—one line in old eds.

⁴ Necessarily.

⁵ Quarter, region.—"*Marche*. A region, *coast*, or quarter."—*Cotgrave*.

Whereto my father willingly did give his like consent :¹
 Lo, Sir Clamydes, now you know what is my whole
 intent ;
 And if you will, as I have said, for me this travail
 take,
 That I am yours with heart and mind your full account
 do make.

Clam. Ah lady,¹

If case these travails should surmount the travails whereby
 came 60
 Unto the worthies of the world such noble bruit and
 fame,
 Yea, though the dangers should surpass stout Hercules
 his toil,
 Who, fearing naught the doggèd fiend, stern Cerberus
 did foil ;
 Take here my hand, if life and limb the living gods do
 lend,
 To purchase thee the dearest drop of blood my heart
 shall spend :
 And therefore, lady, link with me thy loyal heart for aye,
 For I am thine till Fates untwine of vital life the stay,
 Protesting here, if gods assist, the serpent for to kill.

Juli. Then shalt thou of all women win the heart and
 great good-will,

And me possess for spousèd wife, who in election am 70
 To have the crown of Denmark here as heir unto the
 same ;

¹ " Ah lady . . . came "—one line in old ed.

For why¹ no children hath my sire besides me but one
other,

And he, indeed, is heir before for that he is my brother,
And Clyomon so hight his name; but where he doth
remain

Unto my parents is unknown, for once he did obtain
Their good-wills for to go abroad, a while to spend his
days

In purchasing through active deeds both honour, laud,
and praise,

Whereby he might deserve to have the order of a
knight:

But, this omitting, unto thee, Clamydes, here I plight
My faith and troth, if what is said by me thou dost
perform. So

Clam. If not,²

Be sure, O lady, with my life I never will return.

Juli. Then as thou seem'st in thine attire a virgin³
knight to be,

Take thou this shield likewise of white, and bear thy
name by me—

The White Knight of the Silver Shield, to elevate thy
praise. [*Gives shield.*]

Clam. O lady, as your pleasure is, I shall at all assays
Endeavour⁴ my good-will to win, if Mars do send me
might,

¹ "For why"—because.

² "If not . . . return"—one line in old ed.

³ So Dyce.—Old ed. "Virgins."

⁴ "*i.e.* Exert."—*Dyce.*

Such honour as your grace with joy shall welcome home
your knight.

Juli. Then farewell, my dear Clamydes: the gods
direct thy way,
And grant that with the serpent's head behold thy face
I may! 90

Clam. You shall not need to doubt thereof, O faithful
dame so true!
And, humbly kissing here thy hand, I bid thy grace
adieu. [*Exit* JULIANA.]

Ah happy time and blissful day, wherein by fate I find
Such friendly favours as are food to feed both heart and
mind!

To Suavia soil I swiftly will prepare my footsteps right,
There of my father to receive the order of a knight,
And afterwards address myself, in hope of honour's
crown,
Both tiger fell and monster fierce by dint for to drive
down.

The flying serpent soon shall feel how boldly I dare
vaunt me;
And if that Hydra's head she had, yet dread should
never daunt me; 100
If murdering Minotaur a man might count this ugly
beast,

Yet for to win a lady such I do account it least
Of travails toil to take in hand; and therefore, farewell
care,
For hope of honour sends me forth 'mongst warlike
wights to share. [*Exit.*]

[SCENE II.]

*Enter*¹ SIR CLYOMON, *Knight of the Golden Shield, son to the King of Denmark, booted.*—SUTLE SHIFT, *the Vice, within, also booted.*

Clyo. [*to SUTLE SHIFT within.*] Come on, good fellow, follow me, that I may understand Of whence thou art, thus travelling here in a foreign land;

Come, why dost thou not leave loitering there and follow after me?

S. Shift [*within*]. Ah, I am in, and't shall please you!

Clyo. In! why, where art thou in?

S. Shift. Faith, in a dirty ditch with a wanion,² so beray'd³ as it's pity to see.

Clyo. Well, I see thou art a merry companion, I shall like better of thy company:

But, I pray thee, come away.

S. Shift. [*within*]. If I get out one of my legs, as fast as I may.

Ha lo! ah my buttock! the very foundation thereof doth break;

10

¹ Old ed. "*Enter . . . Denmarke with subtill Shift the Vice, booted.*"—The Vice was the buffoon of the Old Moralities.—Sir Clyomon and Shift are "booted" (in their riding-boots) as they are going on a journey.

² So Dyce.—Old ed. "with a woman." ("With a wanion" = with a murrain.)

³ Befouled.

Ha lo ! once again I am as fast as though I had frozen here a week.

[*Here let him slip unto the stage backwards, as though he had pulled his leg out of the mire, one boot off, and then rise up to run in again.*

Clyo. Why, how now ! whither runn'st thou ? art thou foolish in thy mind ?

S. Shift. But to fetch one of my legs, and't shall please, that I have left in the mire behind.

Clyo. One of thy legs ! why, look, man, both thy legs thou hast !

It is but one of thy boots thou hast lost, thy labour thou dost waste.

S. Shift. But one of my boots ! Jesu, I had such a wrench with the fall,

That, I assure, I did think one of my legs had gone withal.

Clyo. Well, let that pass, and tell me what thou art, and what is thy name,

And from whence thou cam'st, and whither thy journey thou dost frame,

That I have met thee by the way, thus travelling in this sort. 20

S. Shift. What you have requested, and't shall please, I am able to report.

What I am by my nature each wight shall perceive

That frequenteth my company by the learning I have :

I am the son of Apollo, and from his high seat I came ;

But whither I go, it skills¹ not, for Knowledge is my name,

And whoso hath knowledge, what needs he to care
Which way the wind blow, his way to prepare?

Clyo. And art thou Knowledge? of troth, I am glad
that I have met with thee.

S. Shift. I am Knowledge, and have as good skill in
a woman as any man whatsoever he be,
For this I am certain off, let me but lie with her all night,
And I'll tell you in the morning whether she is maid,
wife, or sprite ;

And as for other matters, speaking of languishes² or any
other thing,

I am able to serve, and't shall please, and't were great
Alexander the King.

Clyo. Of troth, then, for thy excellency I will thee
gladly entertain,

If in case that with me thou wilt promise to remain.

S. Shift. Nay, and't shall please ye, I am like to a
woman,—say nay, and take it ;³

When a gentleman proffers entertainment, I were a fool
to forsake it.

Clyo. Well, Knowledge, then sith thou art content my
servant to be,
And endu'd with noble qualities thy personage I see,

¹ "It skills not"—it matters not.

² Languages.

³ "*Faire de guedon guedon.* To mince or simper it ; to be nice, quaint, scrupulous of receiving what inwardly is longed for ; to *say nay and take it, as men say maids do.*"—*Cotgrave.* (Cf. *Richard III.*, iii. 7 :—"*Play the maid's part,—still answer nay, and take it.*")

Thou having perfect knowledge how thyself to behave,
 I will send thee of mine errand; but haste thither, I
 crave, 41
 For here I will stay thy coming again.

S. Shift. Declare your pleasure, sir, and whither I
 shall go, and then the case is plain.

Clyo. Nay, of no great importance, but being here in
 Suavia

And near unto the court, I would have thee to take thy way
 Thither with all speed, because I would hear
 If any shows or triumphs be towards,¹ else would I not
 come there;

For only upon feats of arms is all my delight.

S. Shift. [*aside.*] If I had known so much before, serve
 that serve will, I would have serv'd no martial
 knight.— 50

Well, sir, to accomplish your will, to the court I will hie,
 And what news is there stirring bring word by and by.

Clyo. Do so, good Knowledge, and here in place thy
 coming I will stay,

For nothing doth delight me more than to hear of
 martial play. [*Exit S. SHIFT.*

Can food unto the hungry corps² be cause of greater joy
 Than for the haughty heart to hear, which doth itself
 employ

¹ In preparation.

² Often used for the living body.—So in Byrd's *Psalms, Sonnets and Songs*:—

“Care for thy *corps*, but chiefly for soul's sake,
 Cut off excess, sustaining food is best.”

Through martial exercises much to win the bruit of
 fame,
 Where mates do meet which thereunto their fancies
 seem to frame?
 Can music more the pensive heart or daunted mind
 delight,
 Can comfort more the careful corps and over-pallèd
 sprite 60
 Rejoice, than sound of trumpet doth each warlike wight
 allure,
 And drum and fife unto the fight do noble hearts pro-
 cure,
 To see in sunder shiverèd the lance that leads the way,
 And worthy knights unbeaverèd in field amidst the fray?
 To hear the rattling cannons roar, and hilts on helmets
 ring,
 To see the soldiers swarm on heaps where valiant hearts
 do bring
 The cowardly crew into the case of careful captives'
 band,
 Where ancients¹ brave displayèd be and won by force
 of hand?
 What wight would not as well delight as this² to hear
 and see,
 Betake himself in like affairs a fellow mate to be 70
 With Clyomon, to Denmark King the only son and heir,
 Who of the Golden Shield as now the knightly name
 doth bear

¹ Ensigns.

² *i.e.* this wight (the speaker)?

In every land, since that I foil'd the worthy knight of
 fame,
 Sir Samuel, before the king and prince of martial game,
 Alexander call'd the Great; which when he did be-
 hold,
 He gave to me in recompense this shield of glittering
 gold,
 Requesting for to know my name, the which shall not
 be shown
 To any knight unless by force he make it to be known;
 For so I vow'd to Denmark King, my father's grace,
 when I
 First got his leave that I abroad my force and strength
 might try, So
 And so I have myself behaved in city, town, and field,
 That never yet did fall reproach to the Knight of the
 Golden Shield.

Re-enter SUBTLE SWIFT *running.*

S. Shift. God's ames,¹ where are you, where are you?
 and you be a man, come away.

Clyo. Why, what is the matter, Knowledge? to tell
 thy errand stay.

S. Shift. Stay! what talk you of staying? why, then,
 all the sight will be past:

Clamydes the king's son shall be dubb'd knight in all
 haste.

¹ "God's ames"—a corrupt oath.

Clyo. Ah Knowledge, then come indeed, and good
pastime thou shalt see !

I will take the honour from him that dubbèd I may be :
Upon a courageous stomach, come, let us haste thither.

S. Shift. Lead you the way and I'll follow ; we'll be
both made knights together. [*Exit* CLYOMON.]

Ah sirrah, is my master so lusty or dares he be so bold ?
It is no marvel, then, if he bear a shield of gold : 92

But, by your patience, if he continue in this business,
farewell master than,¹

For, I promise you, I intend not very long to be his
man,

Although under the title of Knowledge my name I do
feign,

Subtle Shift I am callèd, that is most plain ;

And as it is my name, so it is my nature also

To play the shifting knave wheresoever I go.

Well, after him I will—but, soft now ! if my master
chance to be lost,

And any man examine me, in telling his name I am as
wise as a post : 100

What a villain was I that, ere he went, could not ask it !

Well, it's no great matter, I am but half bound, I may
serve whom I will yet. [*Exit.*]

¹ Then.

[SCENE III.]

*Enter the KING OF SUAVIA with the Herald before him,
CLAMYDES, three Lords.*

King of S. Come, Clamydes, thou our son, thy father's
talk attend.

Since thou art prest¹ thy youthful days in prowess for to
spend,

And dost of us the order ask of knighthood for to
have,

We know thy deeds deserve the same, and that which
thou dost crave

Thou shalt possess: but first, my son, know thou thy
father's charge,

And what to knighthood doth belong, thine honour to
enlarge;

Unto what end a knight is made that likewise thou
mayst know,

And bear the same in mind also, that honour thine may
flow

Amongst the worthies of the world to thy immortal
fame.

Know thou, therefore, Clamydes dear, to have a knightly
name

10

Is, first, above all other things, his God for to adore

In truth, according to the laws prescribed to him before;

¹ Ready, eager.

Secondly, that he be true unto his lord and king ;
 Thirdly, that he keep his faith and troth in every thing ;
 And then before all other things that else we can com-
 mend,

That he be always ready prest his country to defend ;
 The widow, poor, and fatherless, or innocent bearing
 blame,

To see their cause redressèd right a faithful knight must
 frame ;

In truth he always must be tried : this is the total charge,
 That ¹ will receive a knightly name his honour to enlarge.

Clam. O father, this your gracious counsel given to
 me your only son, 21

Shall not be in oblivion cast till vital race be run !

What way doth win Dame Honour's crown, those paths
 my steps shall trace,

And those that to Reproach do lead, which seeketh to
 deface

True Honour in her regal seat, I shall detest for aye,
 And be as utter enemy to them both night and day.

By flying force of flickering fame your grace shall under-
 stand

Of my behaviour, noble sire, in every foreign land ;

And if you hear by true report I venture in the barge

Of Wilfulness, contráry this your grace's noble charge, 30

Let Ignomy ² to my reproach, instead of Lady Fame,

Sound through the earth and azure skies the strainèd
 blast of shame,

¹ *i.e.* for him that will receive, &c.

² See note I, p. 91.

Whereby within Oblivion's tomb my deeds shall be
detain'd,
Where¹ otherwise of Memory the mind I might have
gain'd,
So that the den of Darksomeness shall ever be my chest,²
Where¹ worthy deeds prefer each wight with honour to
be blest.

[*Enter, behind, CLYOMON and SUTLE SHIFT.*]

King of S. Well, Clamydes, then kneel down, accord-
ing as is right,
That here thou mayst receive of me the order of a knight.

*Here let him kneel down, CLYOMON with SUTLE SHIFT
watching in place; and as the King doth go about
to lay the mace of his head, let CLYOMON take the
blow, and so pass away presently.*

S. Shift. Now prepare yourself, or I'll be either a
knight or a knave.

Clyo. Content thyself, Knowledge, for I'll quickly him
deceive. 40

King of S. The noble order³ of a knight, Clamydes,
unto thee
We give through due desert; wherefore see that thou be
Both valiant, wise, and hardy—

S. Shift. Away now quickly, lest we be take tardy.

[*Exeunt CLYOMON and SUTLE SHIFT.*]

¹ Whereas.

² Coffin.

³ So Dyce.—Old ed. "orders."

King of S. Ah stout attempt of baron bold, that hath
 from this my son
 The knighthood ta'en! My lords, pursue ere far he can
 be run. [*Pursue him and bring in* SHIFT.
 Ah Clamydes, how art thou bereft of honour here!
 Was like presumption ever seen, that one, a stranger mere,¹
 Should come in presence of a prince and 'tempt, as he
 hath done,
 To take the knighthood thus away from him who is his
 son? 50

Clam. Ah father, how am I perplex'd, till I revengèd be
 Upon the wretch which here hath ta'en the honour thus
 from me!

Was ever any one deceived of knighthood so before?

King of S. Well, Clamydes, my lords return; stay till
 we do know more.

Enter SHIFT, *brought in by the two Lords who pursued*
 CLYOMON.

First Lord. O king, the knight is fled and gone, pursuit
 prevaieth² nought;
 But here his slave we taken have to tell why this he
 wrought.

King of S. Ah cruel grudge that grieves my ghost!
 shall he escape me so?
 Shall he with honour from my son, without disturbance,
 go?—

¹ "Stranger mere"—utter stranger.

² Avaieth.—Cf. *Sec. Part of Tamburlaine*, ii. 4:—
 "Nothing *prevails*, for she is dead, my lord."

Ah caitiff thou, declare his name, and why he ventured
here,
Or death shall be thy guerdon sure, by all the gods I
swear! 60

S. Shift. Ah, and't shall please you, I know neither
him, his country, nor name.

Sec. Lord. What, what, sir? are not you his servant?
will you deny the same?

King of S. Nay, then you are a dissembling knave, I
know very well.

S. Shift. And't shall please your grace, even the very
troth I shall tell:

I should have been his servant when we met together,
Which was not full three hours before we came hither.

King of S. Well, what is his name, and of what
country, declare.

S. Shift. That cannot I tell, and't shall please you:
you never saw servant in such care

To know his master's name, neither in town nor field,
And what he was, he would [not ¹] tell but the Knight
of the Golden Shield. 70

King of S. Well, Clamydes, mark my charge, what I
to thee shall say:

Prepare thyself for to pursue that traitor on his way,
Which hath thine honour reft from thee, and, either by
force of hand

Or love, his name and native soil see that thou under-
stand,

¹ The bracketed word was added by Dyce.

S. Shift. Alas, and't shall please you, I am Knowledge, and no evil did pretend!¹

Set me at liberty ; it was the knight that did offend.

Clam. O father, sith that he is Knowledge, I beseech your grace set him free ;

For in these affairs he shall wait and tend on me, 100
If he will protest to be true to me ever.

S. Shift. Ah noble Clamydes, here's my hand, I'll deceive you never !

Clam. Well, then, father, I beseech your grace grant that I may have him.

King of S. Well, Clamydes, I am content, sith thou, my son, dost crave him :

Receive him therefore at my hands.—My lords, come, let's depart.

All the Lords. We ready are to wait on you, O king, with willing heart.

[*Exeunt* [all except CLAMYDES and SUTLE SHIFT].

Clam. Well, Knowledge, do prepare thyself, for here I do protest,

My father's precepts to fulfil, no day nor night to rest
From toilsome travel till I have revenged my cause aright

On him who of the Golden Shield now beareth name of Knight ; 110

Who of mine honour hath me robb'd in such a cowardly sort

As for to be of noble heart it doth him not import.

¹ Intend.

But, Knowledge, to me thy service still thou must with
loyal heart profess.

S. Shift. Use me that all other villains may take
ensample by me, if I digress.

Clam. Well, then, come follow speedily, that him
pursue we may.

S. Shift. Keep you before, and't shall please you, for
I mind not to stay. [Exit CLAMYDES.

Ah sirrah Shift, thou wast driven to thy shifts now
indeed!

I dream'd before that untowardly I should speed;

And yet it is better luck than I look'd to have:

But, as the proverb saith, good fortune ever happeneth
to the veriest knave: 120

And yet I could not escape with my master, do what
I can:

Well, by this bargain he hath lost his new serving-man.

But if Clamydes overtake him now, what buffets will
there be!

Unless it be four miles off the fray, there will be no
standing for me.

Well, after him I will; but howsoever my master speed,
To shift for myself I am fully decreed. [Exit.

[SCENE IV.]

Enter KING ALEXANDER THE GREAT, as valiantly set forth as may be, and as many [Lords and] Soldiers as can.

K. Alex. After many invincible victories and conquests great achieved,

I, Alexander, with sound of fame, in safety am arrived
 Upon my borders long wish'd-for of Macedonia soil,
 And all the world subject have through force of warlike
 toil.

O Mars, I laud thy sacred name! and, for this safe
 return,

To Pallas' temple will I wend, and sacrifices burn
 To thee, Bellona, and the rest, that warlike wights do
 guide,

Who for King Alexander did such good success provide.
 Who bows not now unto my beck? my force who doth
 not fear?

Who doth not of my conquests great throughout the
 world hear? 10

What king as to his sovereign lord doth now not bow
 his knee?

What prince doth reign upon the earth which yields not
 unto me

Due homage for his regal mace? what country is at
 liberty?

What dukedom, island, or province else, to me now are
 not tributary?

What fort of force, or castle strong, have I not batter'd
down?

What prince is he that now by me his princely seat and
crown

Doth not acknowledge for to hold? not one the world
throughout

But of King Alexander's power they all do stand in
doubt: ¹

They fear, as fowls that hovering fly from out the falcon's
way;

As lamb the lion, so my power the stoutest do obey: 20
In field who hath not felt my force where battering
blows abound?

King or keysar, who hath not fix'd his knees to me on
ground?

And yet, Alexander, what art thou? thou art a mortal
wight,

For all that ever thou hast got or won by force in fight.

First Lord. Acknowledging thy state, O king, to be
as thou hast said,

The gods, no doubt, as they have been, will be thy
shield and aid

In all attempts thou tak'st in hand, if case no glory vain
Thou seekest, but acknowledging thy victories and gain
Through the providence of sacred gods to happen unto
thee,

For vain is trust that in himself man doth repose we
see;

30

¹ Dread.

And, therefore, lest these victories which thou, O king,
 hast got
 Should blind thine eyes with arrogancy, thy noble fame
 to blot,
 Let that victorious Prince his words of Macedon, thy sire,
 T' acknowledge still thy state, O king, thy noble heart
 inspire ;
 Who, after all his victories triumphantly obtain'd,
 Lest that the great felicity of that which he¹ had gain'd
 Should cause him to forget himself, a child he did
 provide,
 Which came unto his chamber-door, and every morning
 cried,
 " Philip, thou art a mortal man !" This practice of thy
 sire,
 Amidst all these thy victories, thy servant doth desire, 40
 O Alexander, that thou wilt imprint² within thy mind,
 And then, no doubt, as father did, thou solace sweet
 shalt find.

K. Alex. My lords,³
 Your counsel doubtless I esteem, and with great thanks
 again
 I do requite your courtesy, rejecting—this is plain—
 All vain glory from my heart ; and since the gods divine
 To us above all other⁴ kings this fortune doth assign,

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. " she."

² So Dyce.—Old ed. " them print."

³ So old ed.—Dyce " My lord." (Printed as part of the next line in old ed.)

⁴ So Dyce.—Old ed. " others."

To have in our subjection the world for most part,
 We will at this our home-return,¹ with fervent zeal of
 heart,

In Pallas' temple, to the gods such sacrifices make 50
 Of thankfulness for our success, as they in part shall take
 The same a gratulation sufficient from us sent :

Come, therefore, let us homewards march t' accomplish
 our intent.

All the Lords. We ready are, most famous king, to
 follow thee with victory.

K. Alex. Then sound your drums and trumpets both,
 that we may march triumphantly.

[*Exeunt.*]

[SCENE V.]

Enter Sir CLYOMON, *Knight of G. S.*

Clyo. Now, Clyomon, a knight thou art, though some
 perhaps may say
 Thou cowardly cam'st to Clamydes and stole his right
 away.

No, no,²

It was no cowardly part to come in presence of a king,
 And in the face of all his court to do so worthy a
 thing ;

¹ Dr. Brinsley Nicholson's excellent emendation.—Old ed. "one hour return."

² "No, no,"—printed as part of the next line in old ed.

Amidst the mates that martial be and stern knights of
his hall,

To take the knighthood from their prince even maugre
of them all,

It gives a guerdon of good-will to make my glory glance ;
When warlike wights shall hear thereof, my fame they
will advance :

And where I was pretended¹ late to Denmark King,
my sire, 10

His royal grace to see, homeward² to retire,

Now is my purpose alterèd by bruit of late report ;

And where fame resteth to be had, thither Clyomon
will resort.

For, as I understand by fame, that worthy prince of
might,

The conqueror of conquerors, who Alexander hight,

Returning is to Macedon from many a bloody broil,

And there to keep his royal court now after weary toil ;

Which makes the mind of Clyomon with joys³ to be
clad,

For there, I know, of martial mates is company to
be had.

Adieu, therefore, both Denmark King and Suavia Prince
beside : 20

To Alexander's court I will ; the gods my journey
guide !

¹ " *i.e.* whereas I intended."—*Dyce.*

² " *Qy.* 'His royal grace's court to see, and homeward'?"—*P. A. Daniel.*

³ See note 1, p. 94.

Enter CLAMYDES and SHIFT.

Clam. Come, Knowledge, here he is.—Nay, stay,
thou cowardly knight,

That, like a dastard, cam'st to steal away my right.

Clyo. What, what? you rail, sir princox-prince,¹ me
coward for to call.

S. Shift. And't shall please you, he is a coward; he
would have hired me, amidst your father's hall,
To have done it for him, being himself in such fear²
That scarcely he durst before your presence appear.

Clyo. Why, how now, Knowledge! what, forsake thy
master so soon?

S. Shift. Nay, master was, but not master is; with
you I have done.

Clam. Well, for what intent camest thou my honour
to steal away? 30

Clyo. That I took aught from thee, I utterly deny.

Clam. Didst not thou take the honour which my
father to me gave?

Clyo. Of that thou hadest not, I could thee not
deprave.³

Clam. Didst not thou take away my knighthood
from me?

Clyo. No, for I had it before it was given unto thee;

¹ "Princox" was a term for a pert, saucy fellow.

² So Dyce.—Old ed. "stay."

³ Used frequently in this play (by an unwarrantable stretch of poetical license) for "deprave."

And having it before thee, what argument canst thou
make

That ever from thee the same I did take?

S. Shift. That's true; he received the blow before at
you it came,

And therefore he took it not from you, because you
had not the same.

Clam. Well, what hight thy name? let me that under-
stand; 40

And wherefore thou travelled'st here in my father's
land,

So boldly to attempt in his court such a thing?

Clyo. The bolder the attempt is, more fame it doth
bring:

But what my name is desirest thou to know?

S. Shift. Nay, he hath stoln sheep, I think, for he is
asham'd his name for to show.

Clam. What thy name is I would gladly perstand.¹

Clyo. Nay, that shall never none know, unless by
force of hand

He vanquish me in fight, such a vow have I made;

And therefore to combat with me thyself do persuade,

If thou wilt know my name.

Clam. Well, I accord to the same. 50

S. Shift. Nay, then, God be with you! if you be at
that point, I am gone;

If you be of the fighter's disposition, I'll leave you
alone.

¹ Understand.

Clam. Why, stay, Knowledge : although I fight, thou shalt not be molested.

S. Shift. And't shall please you, this fear hath made me beray¹ myself with a proin-stone² that was not digested.

Clyo. Well, Clamydes, stay thyself, and mark my sayings here,

And do not think I speak this same for that thy force I fear,

But that more honour may redound unto the victor's part :

Wilt thou here give thy hand to me, withouten fraud of heart,

Upon the faith which to a knight doth rightly appertain ?

59

And by the loyalty of a knight I'll swear to thee again
For to observe my promise just ; which is, if thou agree
The fifteenth day next following to meet, sir prince,
with me

Before King Alexander's grace, in Macedonia soil,
Who all the world³ subject hath through force of war-like toil,

For he is chief of chivalry and king of martial mates,
And to his royal court, thou know'st, repair⁴ all estates :
Give me thy hand upon thy faith of promise not to fail,
And here is mine to thee again, if Fortune's froward gale

¹ Befoul.

² Prune-stone.

³ Equivalent to a dissyllable.

⁴ Equivalent to a trisyllable.

Resist me not, the day forespoke to meet, sir prince,
with thee,

Before that king to try our strengths : say if thou dost
agree ; 70

For triple honour will it be to him that gets the
victory

Before so worthy a prince as he and nobles all so
publicly,

Where otherwise, if in this place we should attempt the
same,

Of the honour that were got thereby but small would
be the fame.

Clam. Well, sir knight, here is my hand, I'll meet
in place forespoke.

Clyo. And, by the loyalty of a knight, I'll not my
words revoke.

Clam. Till then adieu ; I'll keep my day.

*Clyo.*¹ And I, if fates do not gainsay. [*Exit.*

S. Shift. What, is he gone, and did take no leave
of me ?

Jesu, so unmannerly a gentleman did any man see ? 80
But now, my lord, which way will you travel, declare.

Clam. Sith I have fifteen days' respite myself to
prepare,

My lady's charge for to fulfill, behold, I do intend.

S. Shift. Your lady ! and't shall please you, why, who
is your lady ? may a man be so bold as ask and
not offend ?

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. "Clamy."

Clam. Juliana, daughter to the King of Denmark,
lo, is she,

Whose knight I am, and from her hands this shield was
given to me

In sign and token of good-will; whose noble grace
to gain,

I have protested in her cause for to omit no pain
Nor travail till I have subdued the flying serpent's force,
Which in the Forest of Marvels is, who taketh no
remorse¹ 90

Of womenkind, but doth devour all such as are astray,
So that no one dares go abroad nor wander forth the
way;

And sith I have yet fifteen days myself for to prepare
To meet the Knight of the Golden Shield, my heart is
void of care:

I will unto the forest wend, sith it is in my way,
And for my Juliana's sake that cruel serpent slay.

S. Shift. What, are you a madman? will you wilfully
be slain?

If you go into that forest, you will never come out
again.

Clam. Why so, Knowledge? dost thou think the
serpent I fear?

S. Shift. No; but do you not know of Bryan Sans-foy,
the champion, dwells there? 100

Clam. A cowardly knight, Knowledge, is he, and
dares fight with no man.

¹ Pity.

S. Shift. Ah, a noble match! couple him and me together than.¹

Yea, but although he dares not fight, an² enchanter he is,

And whosoever comes in that forest to enchant he doth not miss.

Clam. Tush, tush, I fear him not, Knowledge; and therefore come away.

S. Shift. Well, seeing you are so wilful, go you before, I'll not stay. [*Exit CLAMYDES.*]

Ah sirrah, now I know all my master's mind, the which I did not before:

He adventureth for a lady—well, I say no more.

But to escape the enchantments of Bryan Sans-foy,—

That's Bryan Without-faith,—I have devised a noble toy;³ 110

For he and I am both of one consanguinity;

The veriest cowardly villain that ever was born, that's of a certainty,

I'll fight with no man; no more will Bryan, that's plain,

But by his enchantments he putteth many to great pain,

And in a forest of strange marvels doth he keep,⁴

Altogether by enchantments to bring men asleep

Till he have wrought his will of them. To Bryan straight will I,

And of my master's coming to the forest inform him privily:

¹ Then.

³ Conceit.

² So Dyce.—Old ed. "and."

⁴ Dwell.

So shall I win his favour ; and, Subtle Shift, in the end
Thou shalt escape his enchantment, for he will be thy
friend. 120

Well, unknown to my master, for mine own safeguard,
this will I do ;

And now, like a subtle shifting knave, after him I'll go.
[*Exit.*]

[SCENE VI.]

Enter BRYAN SANS-FOY.¹

B. Sans-foy. Of Bryan Sans-foy who hath not heard?
not for his valiant acts,
But well I know throughout the world do ring his
cowardly facts.
What tho,² I pray? all are not born to be God Mars
his men ;
To toy with dainty dames in courts should be no copes-
mates³ then :
If all were given to chivalry, then Venus might go weep,
For any court in ventry that she were like to keep.
But shall I frame, then, mine excuse by serving Venus she,
When I am known throughout the world faint-hearted
for to be ?
No, no, alas, it will not serve ! for many a knight in love,
Most valiant hearts no doubt they have, and knightly
prowess prove 10

¹ Our author probably borrowed the name *Sans-foy* from Spenser's *Faerie Queene*, B. i. C. ii.—*Dyce*.

² Then.

³ Companions.

To get their ladies' loyal hearts ; but I in Venus' yoke
Am forced for want of valliancy my freedom to provoke,
Bearing the name and port of knight, enchantments for
to use,

Wherewith full many a worthy wight most cowardly I
abuse ;

As witnesseth the number now which in my castle lie,
Who, if they were at liberty, in arms I durst not try
The feeblest there though he unarm'd, so is my courage
daunted

Whenas I see the glittering arms whereby each knight
is vaunted.

But how I vanquish these same knights is wonderful to
see ;

And knights that ventured for her love, whom I do love,
they be,

That's Juliana, daughter to the King of Denmark's grace,
Whose beauty is the cause that I do haunt or keep this
place,

For that no wight may her possess, unless by vow
decreed

He bring and do present to her the flying serpent's
head :

Which many have attempt to do, but none yet could him
slay,

Ne afterward hence back again for me could pass away,
For that through my enchantments, lo, which here this
forest keep,

So soon as I did look on them, they straight were in a
sleep ;

Then presently I them unarm'd and to my castle
 brought,
 And there in prison they do lie, not knowing what was
 wrought. 30
 Lo, thus I range the woods to see who doth the serpent
 slay,
 That by enchantment I may take the head from him
 away,
 And it present unto the dame, as though I were her
 knight.
 Well, here comes one : I'll shroud myself, for sure I will
 not fight.

Enter SUBTLE SHIFT.

S. Shift. Gog's blood,¹ where might I meet with that
 cowardly knave, Bryan Sans-foy?
 I could tell him such a tale now as would make his
 heart leap for joy.
 Well, yonder I have espied one, whatsoever he be.
B. Sans-foy. [*aside.*] Nay, Gog's blood, I'll be gone ;
 he shall not fight with me :
 But by enchantment I'll be even with him by and by.
S. Shift. A[h], and't shall please you, I'll fight with
 no man ; never come so nigh. 40
B. Sans-foy. Why, what art thou, declare ; whither
 dost thou run ?
S. Shift. Even the cowardliest villain, and't shall
 please you, that lives under the sun.

¹ A corruption of "God's blood." Cf. "Gog's bores," "Gog's wounds," &c.

B. Sans-foy. What, of my fraternity? dost thou not know Bryan Sans-foy?

S. Shift. What, Master Bryan! Jesu, how my heart doth leap for joy

That I have met with you! who ever had better luck?
But touch me not.¹

B. Sans-foy. Wherefore?

S. Shift. A[h], lest you enchant me into the likeness of a buck!

B. Sans-foy. Tush, tush, I warrant thee: but what art thou, declare.

S. Shift. Knowledge, and it shall please you; who hither doth repair

To tell you good news.

B. Sans-foy. Good news! what are they, Knowledge, express.

S. Shift. A knight hath slain the flying serpent.

B. Sans-foy. Tush, it is not so.

S. Shift. It is most true that I do confess. 50

B. Sans-foy. Ah, what hight his name, Knowledge? let me that understand.

S. Shift. Clamydes, the White Knight, son to the King of Suavia land,

Who for Juliana, daughter to the King of Denmark's grace,

Did take the attempt in hand: now you know the whole case.

¹ "' But touch me not,' Given to ' Bryan' in the 4to; where also the next nine speeches are wrongly distributed, what belongs to Bryan being assigned to Shift, and *vice versâ*,"—*Dyce*.

B. Sans-foy. Ah happy news of gladsomeness unto
my daunted mind!

Now for to win my lady's love good fortune is assign'd ;
For though she be Clamydes' right, won worthily indeed,
Yet will I sure possess that dame by giving of the head.
But, Knowledge, whereabout declare doth that Clamydes rest.

S. Shift. Even hard by in the forest here, where he
slew the beast, 60

I left him, and to seek you did hie :
But let us go further into the woods, you shall meet him
by and by.

B. Sans-foy. Well, Knowledge, for thy pains take this
as some reward ; [Gives money.]
And if thou wilt abide with me, be sure I'll thee regard
Above all others of my men ; besides I'll give to thee
A thing that from enchantments aye preservèd shalt
thou be.

S. Shift. Then here is my hand, I'll be your servant ever.

B. Sans-foy. And, seeing thou art a coward as well as
I, I'll forsake thee never.

But come, let us go Clamydes to meet.

S. Shift. Keep on your way and I'll follow. [*Exit*
BRYAN SANS-FOY.¹] I trust if he meet him, he'll
take him to his feet. 70

Gog's blood, was ever seen such a jolt-headed villain as
he,

To be so afraid of such a faint-heart knave as I am to see ?

¹ Old ed. "*Exeunt.*"

Of the fraternity, quoth you? by'r lady, it's a notable brood!

Well, Shift, these chinks¹ doeth thy heart some good;
And I'll close with Bryan till I have gotten the thing
That he hath promised me, and then I'll be with him to
bring:²

Well, such shifting knaves as I am, the ambodexter³
must play,
And for commodity serve every man, whatsoever the
world say.

Well, after Bryan I will, and close with him a while,
But, as well as Clamydes, in the end I'll him beguile. So
[*Exit.*]

[SCENE VII.]

*Enter CLAMYDES with the head [of the flying serpent]
upon his sword.*

Clam. Ah happy day! my deadly foe submitted hath
to death:
Lo, here the hand, lo, here the sword that stopt the
vital breath!

¹ "Monnoye. Money, coin, *chinks*."—*Cotgrave*.

² "I'll be with him to bring"—a proverbial expression of which the meaning has not been satisfactorily explained. See Dyce's *Shakesp. Gloss.*, s.v. *bring*.

³ "*Ambidexter* is that jurour or embraceour that taketh of both parties for the giving of his verdict."—*Cowell's Interpreter*. (Hence used in the sense of jack-of-both-sides.)

Lo, here the head that shall possess my Juliana¹ dear!
 The Knight of the Golden Shield his force what need I
 now to fear?
 Since I by force subduèd have this serpent fierce of
 might,
 Who vanquished hath, as I have heard, full many a
 worthy knight,
 Which, for to win my lady's love, their lives have
 ventured here.
 Besides, that cowardly Bryan, which the Faithless Shield²
 doth bear,
 A number keeps, as I have heard, as captives in his
 hold,
 Whom he hath by enchantment got and not through
 courage bold: 10
 Shall such defamèd dastards, dared³ by knights, thus
 bear their name?
 Shall such as are without all faith live to impair our
 fame?
 Shall valiant hearts by cowardly charm be kept in
 captives' thrall?
 Shall knights live subject to a wretch which hath no
 heart at all?
 Nay, first, Clamydes, claim to thee fell Atropos her⁴
 stroke,
 Ere thou dost see such worthy knights to bear the heavy
 yoke

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. "Julianas."

² "i.e. the shield which has the impress *Sans-foy*."—Dyce.

³ Scared.

⁴ So Dyce.—Old ed. "his."

Of cowardly Bryan Without-faith : his charms let daunt
not thee ;

And for his force thou need'st not fear, the gods thy
shield will be.

Well, to meet the Knight of the Golden Shield yet ten
days' space I have

And to set free these worthy knights ; but rest a while I
crave : 20

Here in this place near to this fort, for that I weary am
With travail since from killing of the serpent late I came,
Lo, here a while I mind to rest, and Bryan then subdue,
And then to Alexander's court, to keep my promise true.

[Here let him sit down and rest himself.]

Enter BRYAN SANS-FOY *and* SHIFT.

B. Sans-foy. Come, Knowledge, for here he lies, laid
weary on the ground.

S. Shift. Nay, I'll not come in his sight, if you would
give me a thousand pound,

For he is the terriblest knight of any you have heard
spoke ;

He'll beat a hundred such as you and I am down at
one stroke.

B. Sans-foy. Tush, fear thou naught at all : I have
charmed him, and he is fast asleep,

Lying near unto the castle here which I do keep ; 30
And ten days in this sleep I have charmed him to
remain

Before nature shall overcome it that he might wake again.

In the mean season, lo, behold, the serpent's head I'll
take away,

His shield, and his apparel: this done, then will I
convey

His body into prison, with other his companions to lie,
Whose strengths, ah Knowledge, I durst never attempt
to try!

S. Shift. Ah, handle him softly, or else you will cause
him to awake!

B. Sans-foy. Tush, tush, not if all the noise in the
world I were able to make:

Till ten days be expired the charm will not leave him;
And then, I am sure, he will marvel who did thus
deceive him. 40

[*Takes away from CLAMYDES his apparel, his
shield, and the serpent's head.*]

So, now he is strippèd, stay thou here for a season,
And I'll go fetch two of my servants to carry him into
prison.

S. Shift. Well, do so, Master Bryan, and for your
coming I'll stay. [*Exit* BRYAN.]

Gog's blood, what a villain am I my master to betray!
Nay, sure, I'll awake him, if it be possible, ere they carry
him to jail.—

Master! what, master! awake, man! what, master!—
Ah, it will not prevail!¹

Am not I worthy to be hanged? was ever seen such a
deceitful knave?

¹ Avail.

What villany was in me when unto Bryan understanding
I gave
Of my master's being in this forest? but much I muse,
indeed,
What he means to do with my master's apparel, his
shield, and the head. 50
Well, seeing it is through my villany my master is at this
drift,
Yet, when he is in prison, Shift shall not be void of a
shift
To get him away; but if it ever come to his ear
That I was the occasion of it, he'll hang me, that's clear.
Well, here comes Bryan: I'll cloak¹ with him, if I may,
To have the keeping of my master in prison night and
day.

Re-enter BRYAN SANS-FOY, *two* Servants.

B. Sans-foy. Come, sirs, take up this body, and carry
it in to the appointed place,
And there let it lie, for as yet he shall sleep ten days'
space.

[*Carry him out.*

S. Shift. How say you, Master Bryan, shall I of him
have the guard?

B. Sans-foy. By my troth, policy thy good-will to re-
ward; 60

In hope of thy just service, content, I agree

¹ Deal cunningly, dissemble.

For to resign the keeping of this same knight unto thee :
But give me thy hand that thou wilt deceive me never.

S. Shift. Here's my hand : charm, enchant, make a
spider-catcher¹ of me, if I be false to you ever.

B. Sans-foy. Well, then, come, follow after me, and
the guard of him thou shalt have.

S. Shift. A thousand thanks I give you : this is all
the promotion I crave. [*Exit* BRYAN SANS-FOY.
Ah sirrah, little knows Bryan that Clamydes my master is ;
But to set him free from prison I intend not to miss :
Yet still in my mind I can do no other but muse
What practice with my master's apparel and shield he
will use. 70
Well, seeing I have played the crafty knave with the one,
I'll play it with the other ;
Subtle Shift for advantage will deceive his own brother.

[*Exit.*

[SCENE VIII.]

*Here let them make a noise as though they were Mariners ;
and after, CLYOMON, knight of G. S., come in with one.*

Clyo. [*within.*] Ah, set me to shore, sirs, in what
country soever we be !

*Shipmaster.*² [*within.*] Well, hale out the cock-boat,
seeing so sick we do him see :
Strike sail, cast anchors, till we have rigged our ship
again,
For never were we in such storms before, that's plain.

¹ Monkey.

² So Dyce.—Old ed. "Shiftmai."

Enter CLYOMON, Boatswain.

Clyo. Ah, boatswain, gramercies for thy setting me to shore!

Boat. Truly, gentleman, we were never in the like tempests before.

Clyo. What country is this wherein now we be!

Boat. Sure, the Isle of Strange Marshes, as our master told to me.

Clyo. How far is it from Macedonia canst thou declare?

Boat. More than twenty days' sailing, and if the weather were fair. 10

Clyo. Ah cruel hap of Fortune's spite, which 'sign'd this luck to me!—

What palace, boatswain, is this same, canst thou declare, we see?

Boat. There King Patranius keeps his court, so far as I do guess,

And by this train of ladies here I sure can judge no less.

Clyo. Well, boatswain, there is for thy pains; and here upon the shore [Gives money.]

I'll lie to rest my weary bones; of thee I crave no more.

[Exit [Boatswain. CLYOMON lies down.]

Enter NERONIS, daughter to PATRANIUS, King of the Strange Marshes, two Lords, two Ladies.

Nero. My lords,¹

Come, will it please you walk abroad to take the pleasant air,

¹ " My Lords "—printed as part of the next line in old ed.

According to our wonted use, in fields both fresh and fair?
My ladies here, I know right well, will not gainsay the
same. 20

First Lord. Nor we, sure, for to pleasure you, Neronis,
noble dame.

Nero. Yes, yes, men they love entreaty much before
they will be won.

Sec. Lord. No, princess, that hath women's natures¹
been since first the world begun.

Nero. So you say.

First Lord. We boldly may,
Under correction of your grace.

Nero. Well, will it please you forth to trace?
That, when we have of fragrant fields the dulcet fumes
obtain'd,

We may unto the sea-side go, whereas are to be gain'd
More stranger sights among Neptune's waves in seeing
ships to sail, 30

Which pass here by my father's shore with merry western
gale.

First Lord. We shall your highness lead the way to
fields erst spoke before.

Nero. Do so, and, as we do return, we'll come hard
by the shore. [*Exeunt.*

Clyo. What greater grief can grow to gripe the heart
of grievèd wight
Than thus to see fell Fortune she to hold his state in
spite?

¹ Dyce's correction "nature" is unnecessary.

Ah cruel chance, ah luckless lot, to me poor wretch
assign'd!

Were ever seen such contraries by fraudulent goddess
blind

To any one, save only I, imparted for to be?

T' amate¹ the mind of any man, did ever Fortune she
Show forth herself so cruel bent as thus to keep me
back 40

From pointed place by weather driven, my sorrows more
to sack?²

Ah fatal hap! herein, alas, what further shall I say?
Since I am forcèd for to break mine oath and pointed
day

Before King Alexander's grace: Clamydes will be there,
And I through Fortune's cruel spite oppress'd with
sickness here;

For now within two days it is that we should meet
together:

Woe worth the wind and raging storms, alas, that brought
me hither!

Now will Clamydes me accuse a faithless knight to be,
And eke report that cowardliness did daunt the heart
of me:

¹ "i.e. daunt, dismay.—The 4to 'animate.'"—*Dyce*.

² "i.e. heap—as by pouring out of a sack: so we afterwards find in the present play [p. 169].

'Hath sack'd on me such huge heaps of ceaseless sorrows here,'

—a sense in which I do not remember to have seen the word used elsewhere."—*Dyce*.

The worthy praise that I have won through fame shall
 be defaced, 50

The name of the Knight of the Golden Shield, alas, shall
 be erased!¹

Before that noble prince of might whereas Clamydes he
 Will show himself in combat-wise for to exclaim on me
 For breaking of my pointed day; and, Clyomon, to thy
 grief,

Now art thou in a country strange, clean void of all
 relief,

Oppress'd with sickness through the rage of stormy
 blasts and cold:—

Ah Death, come with thy direful mace! for longer to
 unfold

My sorrows here it booteth not: yet, Clyomon, do stay;
 The ladies, lo, come towards thee that walk'd the other
 way.

Enter NERONIS, two Lords, and two Ladies.

Nero. Come, fair dames, sith that we have in fragrant
 fields obtain'd 60

Of dulcet flowers the pleasant smell, and that these
 knights disdain'd

Not to bear us company, our walk more large to make,
 Here by the sea of surging waves our home-return we'll
 take.²—

My lords, therefore, do keep your way.

First Lord. As it please your grace, we shall obey.

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. “defaced.”

² So Dyce.—Old ed. “make.”

But, behold, madam, what woful wight here in our way
before,

As seemeth very sick to me, doth lie upon the shore.

Nero. My lords, let's know the cause of grief whereof
he is oppress'd,

That, if he be a knight, it may by some means be
redress'd.—

Fair sir, well met : why lie you here ? what is your cause
of grief? 70

Clyo. O lady, sickness by the sea hath me oppress'd,
in brief.

Nero. Of truth, my lords, his countenance bewrays
him for to be,

In health, of valiant heart and mind and eke of high
degree.

Sec. Lord. It doth no less than so import, O prin-
cess, as you say.

Nero. Of whence are you, or what's your name, you
wander forth this way ?

Clyo. Of small valure,¹ O lady fair, alas, my name it is !
And for not telling of the same hath brought me unto this.

Nero. Why, for what cause, sir knight, should you not
once² express your name ?

Clyo. Because, O lady, I have vow'd contráry to the
same ;

But where I travel, lady fair, in city, town, or field, 80
I'm callèd and do bear by name the Knight of the
Golden Shield.

¹ Valur.

² "Once"—added by P. A. Daniel.

Nero. Are you that Knight of the Golden Shield, of whom such fame doth go?

Clyo. I am that selfsame knight, fair dame, as here my shield doth show.

Nero. Ah worthy, then, of help indeed!—My lords, assist, I pray,

And to my lodging in the court see that you him convey.
For certainly within my mind his state is much deplored.—

But do despair in naught, sir knight, for you shall be restored,

If physic may your grief redress; for I, Neronis, lo,
Daughter to Patranus King, for that which fame doth show

Upon your acts, will be your friend, as after you shall prove. 90

First Lord. In doing so you shall have meed¹ of mighty Jove above.

Clyo. O princess, if I ever be to health restored again,
Your faithful servant, day and night, I vow here to remain.

Nero. Well, my lords, come after me; do bring him, I require.

Both Lords. We shall, O princess, willingly accomplish your desire. [*Excunt.*

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. “need.”

[SCENE IX.]

Enter BRYAN SANS-FOY *having* CLAMYDES *his apparel on, his shield, and the serpent's head.*

B. Sans-foy. Ah sirrah,¹

Now are the ten days full expired wherein Clamydes he
Shall wake out of his charmèd sleep, as shortly you
shall see.

But here I have what I desired, his shield, his coat,
and head :

To Denmark will I straight prepare,² and there present
with speed

The same to Juliana's grace, as in Clamydes' name,

Whereby I am assured I shall enjoy that noble dame ;

For why³ Clamydes he is safe for ever being free,

And unto Knowledge is he left here guarded for to be.

But no man knows of my pretence,⁴ ne whither I am
gone ;

10

For secretly from castle I have stoln this night alone,

In this order as you see, in the attire of a noble knight ;

But yet, poor Bryan, still thy heart holds courage in
despite.

Well, yet the old proverb to disprove I purpose to begin,
Which always saith that cowardly hearts fair ladies never
win :

¹ " Ah sirrah "—printed as part of the next line in old ed.

² Cf. scene xviii.

" I, Providence, *prepare*
To thee from seat of mighty Jove."

³ " For why "—because.

⁴ Intention.

Shall I not Juliana win, and who hath a cowardlier
heart?
Yet for to brag and boast it out, I'll will none take my
part;
For I can look both grim and fierce as though I were
of might,
And yet three frogs¹ out of a bush my heart did so
affright
That I fell dead almost therewith : well, cowardly as I am,
Farewell, forest, for now I will, in Knight Clamydes'
name, 21
To Denmark to present this head to Juliana bright,
Who shall a cowardly dastard wed instead of a worthy
knight. [Exit.]

[SCENE X.]

Enter SHIFT with sword and target.

S. Shift. Be² your leave, I came up so early this
morning that I cannot see my way;
I am sure it's scarce yet in the break of the day.
But you muse, I am sure, wherefore these weapons I
bring:
Well, listen unto my tale, and you shall know every
thing;

¹ So in one of Campion's songs:—

“ A yellow frog, alas ! will fright me so
As I should start and tremble as I go.”

² By.

Because I play'd the shifting knave to save myself from
harm,
And by my procurement my master was brought in this
charm.
The ten days are expired, and this morning he shall
awake,
And now, like a crafty knave, to the prison my way will
I take
With these same weapons, as though I would fight to
set him free,
Which will give occasion that he shall mistrust there was
no deceit in me ; 10
And having the charge of him here under Bryan Sans-
foy,
I'll open the prison-doors, and make as though I did
employ
To do it by force, through good-will and only for his
sake ;
Then shall Clamydes, being at liberty, the weapons of
me take,
And set upon Bryan and all his men, now that they are
asleep,
And so be revengèd for that he did him keep
By charm: in this order so shall they both de-
ceivèd be,
And yet upon neither part mistrust towards me.
Well, near to the prison I'll draw to see if he be
awake :
Hark, hark, this same is he, that his lamentation doth
make !

Clam. [*in prison.*] Ah fatal hap! where am I, wretch?
in what distressèd case!

Bereft of tire, of¹ head, and shield, not knowing in what
place

My body is! Ah heavenly gods, was e'er such strange-
ness seen?

What, do I dream? or am I still within the forest green?
Dream! no, no, alas, I dream not I! my senses all do
fail,

The strangeness of this cruel hap doth make my heart
to quail.

Clamydes, ah, by Fortune she what froward luck and fate
Most cruelly assignèd is unto thy noble state!

Where should I be? or in what place hath destiny
assign'd

My sely corpse for want of food and comfort to be
pined? 30

Ah, farewell hope of purchasing my lady! since is lost
The serpent's head, whereby I should possess that jewel
most.

Ah, farewell hope of honour eke! now shall I break my
day

Before King Alexander's grace, whereon my faith doth
stay.

And shall I be found a faithless knight? fie on fell For-
tune, she

Which hath her wheel of froward chance thus whirlèd
back on me!

¹ "'Tire, of,' the 4to 'Tyro.'"—*Dyce.*

Ah, farewell King of Suavia land! ah, farewell Denmark
dame!

Farewell, thou Knight of the Golden Shield! to thee
shall rest all fame;

To me this direful destiny; to thee, I know, renown;
To me the blast of Ignomy;¹ to thee Dame Honour's
crown. 40

Ah, hateful hap! what shall I say? I see the gods have
'sign'd

Through cruelty my careful corps in prison to be pined;
And naught, alas, amates me so, but that I know not
where I am,

Nor how into this doleful place my woful body came!

S. Shift. Alas, good Clamydes, in what an admiration
is he,

Not knowing in what place his body should be!

Clam. [*in prison.*] Who nameth poor Clamydes there?
reply to him again.

S. Shift. And't shall please you, I am your servant
Knowledge, which in a thousand woes for you
remain.

Clam. [*in prison.*] Ah Knowledge, where am I, declare,
and be brief. 50

S. Shift. Where are you! faith, even in the castle of
that false thief,

Bryan Sans-foy, against whom to fight and set you free
Look out at the window, behold, I have brought tools
with me.

¹ See note 1, p. 91.

Clam. [*in prison*]. Ah Knowledge, then cowardly that
caitiff did me charm?

S. Shift. Yea, or else he could never have done you
any harm :

But be of good cheer ; for such a shift I have made,
That the keys of the prison I have got, yourself persuade,
Wherewith this morning I am come to set you free,
And, as they lie in their beds, you may murder Bryan
and his men, and set all other at liberty.

Clam. [*in prison*]. Ah Knowledge, this hath me bound
to be thy friend for ever ! 60

S. Shift. A true servant, you may see, will deceive his
master never. [*Opens the prison-door.*]

So, the doors are open ; now come and follow after me.

[CLAMYDES] *enter out.*

Clam. Ah heavens, in what case myself do I see !
But speak, Knowledge, canst thou tell how long have I
been here?

S. Shift. These ten days full, and sleeping still ; this
sentence is most clear.

Clam. Alas, then this same is the day the which
appointed was
By the Knight of the Golden Shield to me that combat
ours should pass
Before King Alexander's grace ; and there I know he is !
Ah cruel Fortune, why shouldst thou thus wrest my
chance amiss,
Knowing I do but honour seek, and thou dost me
defame, 70

In that contrary mine expect thou all things seeks to frame?
The faith and loyalty of a knight thou causest me to break :
Ah hateful dame, why shouldst thou thus thy fury on me
wreak ?

Now will King Alexander judge the thing in me to be
The which, since first I arms could bear, no wight did
ever see.

But, Knowledge, give from thee to me those weapons,
that I may

Upon that Bryan be revenged, which cowardly did betray
Me of my things, and here from thrall all other knights
set free

Whom he by charm did bring in bale as erst he did by me.
Come, into his lodging will I go, and challenge him and his.

S. Shift. Do so, and to follow I will not miss. SI

[*Exit* [CLAMYDES *with the weapons.*]]

Ah sirrah, here was a shift according to my nature and
condition !

And a thousand shifts more I have to put myself out of
suspicion ;

But it doth me good to think how that cowardly knave,
Bryan Sans-foy,

Shall be taken in the snare ; my heart doth even leap
for joy.

Hark, hark ! my master is amongst them ; but let him
shift as he can,

For not, to deal with a dog, he shall have help of his
man. [*Exit.*¹

¹ Old ed. "*Exeunt.*"

Re-enter, after a little fight within, CLAMYDES, three Knights.

Clam. Come, come, sir knights; for so unfortunate
was never none as I;
That I should joy¹ that is my joy the heavens themselves
deny:
That cowardly wretch that kept you here, and did me
so deceive, 90
Is fled away, and hath the shield the which my lady gave
To me in token of her love, the serpent's head like case,
For which this mine adventure was, to win her noble
grace.

First Knight. And sure that same th' occasion was
why we adventured hether.

Clam. Well, sith I have you deliver'd, whenas you
please, together,
Each one into his native soil his journey do prepare;
For though that I have broke my day, as erst I did
declare,
Through this most cowardly caitiff's charms, in meeting
of the knight
Which of the Golden Shield bears name, to know else
what he hight
I will to Alexander's court, and if that thence he be, 100
Yet will I seek to find him out, lest he impute to me
Some cause of cowardliness to be; and therefore, sir
knights, depart;

¹ Enjoy.

As to myself I wish to you with fervent zeal of heart :
 Yet, if that any one of you do meet this knight by way,
 What was the cause of this my let,¹ let him perstand² I
 pray.

All the Knights. We shall not miss, O noble knight,
 t' accomplish this your will.

Clam. Well, then, adieu, sir knights, each one ; the
 gods protect you still ! [*Exeunt* [Knights.]

What, Knowledge, ho ! where art thou, man ? come
 forth, that hence we may.

S. Shift. [*within.*] Where am I ! faith, breaking open
 of chests here within, for I'll have the spoil of
 all away.

Clam. Tush, tush,³ 110

I pray thee come, that hence we may ; no riches thou
 shalt lack.

[*Re-enter*] SHIFT *with a bag, as it were, full of gold on
 his back.*

S. Shift. I come now with as much money as I am
 able to carry of my back ;

A[h], there was never poor ass so loaden ! But how
 now ! that cowardly Bryan have you slain ?

And your shield, the serpent's head, and coat, have you
 again ?

Clam. Ah, no, Knowledge !⁴

¹ Hindrance.

² Understand.

³ "Tush, tush,"—printed as part of the following line in old ed.

⁴ "Ah no, Knowledge !"—printed as part of the following line in old ed.

The knights that here were captives kept, they are by
me at liberty,
But that false Bryan this same night is fled away for
certainty,
And hath all things he took from me convey'd where
none doth know.

S. Shift. O the bones of me ! how will you, then, do
for the serpent's head to Juliana to show ?

Clam. I have no other hope, alas, but only that her
grace 120
Will credit give unto my words, whenas I show my case,
How they were lost : but first, ere I unto that dame
return,
I'll seek the Knight of the Golden Shield whereas he
doth sojourn,
T' accomplish what my father will'd ; and therefore come
away.

S. Shift. Well, keep on before, for I mind not to stay.
[Exit CLAMYDES.

Ah sirrah, the craftier knave, the better luck ! that's plain :
I have such a deal of substance here, where Bryan's men
are slain,
That it passeth :¹ O, that I had while for to stay !
I could load a hundred carts full of kitchen-stuff away.
Well, it's not best to tarry too long behind, lest my
master over-go, 130
And then some knave, knowing of my money, a piece
of cozenage show. [Exit.

¹ *i.e.* passeth belief.

[SCENE XI.]

Enter NERONIS.

*Nero.*¹ How can that tree but wither'd be,
 That wanteth sap to moist the root?
 How can that vine but waste and pine,
 Whose plants are trodden under foot?
 How can that spray but soon decay,
 That is with wild weeds overgrown?
 How can that wight in aught delight,
 Which shows and hath no good-will shown?
 Or else how can that heart, alas,
 But die, by whom each joy doth pass? 10
Neronis, ah, I am the tree which wanteth sap to moist
 the root!
Neronis, ah, I am the vine whose plants are trodden
 under foot!
 I am the spray which doth decay, and is with wild weeds
 overgrown;
 I am the wight without delight, which shows and hath
 no good-will shown:
 Mine is the heart by whom, alas, each pleasant joy doth
 pass!
 Mine is the heart which vades² away as doth the flower
 or grass:

¹ Perhaps *Neronis* should be represented reading from a book. Lines 1-10 would in that case be the poem which she reads. After closing the book she proceeds to apply the verses to her own fortunes.—Cf. Lord Vaux's poem in the *Paradise of Dainty Devices*, "How can the tree but waste and wither away," &c.

² Decays, withers.

In wanting sap to moist the root, is joys that made me
glad ;
And plants being trodden under foot, is pleasures that
were had :
I am the spray which doth decay, whom cares have
overgrown—
But stay, Neronis ; thou saist thou show'st and hast¹ no
good-will shown : 20
Why, so I do ; how can I tell ? Neronis, force² no
cruelty ;
Thou seest thy knight enduèd is with all good gifts of
courtesy :
And doth Neronis love indeed ? to whom love doth she
yield ?
Even to that noble bruit of fame, the Knight of the
Golden Shield.
Ah woful dame, thou know'st not thou of what degree
he is !
Of noble blood his gestures show, I am assured of this.
Why, belike he is some runagate, that will not show his
name :
Ah, why should I this allegatè ?³ he is of noble fame.
Why dost thou not express thy love to him, Neronis,
then ?
Because shamefacedness and womanhood bid us not
seek to men. 30

¹ Old ed. "hath."

² If there is no corruption, "force," must have the (not unusual) meaning—*regard, take heed of*. But qy. "forge" (*i.e.* imagine) ?

³ *Allege*.

Ah careful dame, lo, thus I stand, as 'twere one in a
trance,
And lacketh boldness for to speak which should my
words advance!
The Knight of the Golden Shield it is to whom a thrall
I am,
Whom I to health restorèd have since that to court he
came:
And now he is prest¹ to pass again upon his weary way
Unto the court of Alexander; yet hath he broke his
day,
As he to me the whole express'd.—Ah sight that doth
me grieve!
Lo where he comes to pass away, of me to take his
leave!

Enter CLYOMON.

Clyo. Who hath more cause to praise the gods than I,
whose state deplored,
Through physic and Neronis' help, to health am now
restored? 40
Whose fervent thrall I am become: yet urgent causes
dooth
Constrain me for to keep it close, and not to put in proof
What I might do to win her love; as first my oath and
vow
In keeping of my name unknown, which she will not
allow.

¹ Ready, intent.

If I should seem to break ¹ my mind, being a princess
born,

To yield her love to one unknown, I know she'll think
it scorn :

Besides, here longer in this court, alas, I may not stay,
Although that with Clamydes he I have not kept my day,
Lest this he should suppose in me for cowardliness of
heart :

To seek him out elsewhere I will from out this land
depart. 50

Yet though unto Neronis she I may not show my mind,
A faithful heart, when I am gone, with her I leave behind,
Whose bounteousness I here have felt : but since I may
not stay,

I will to ² take my leave of her before I pass away.

Lo where she walks.—O princess, well met : why are
you here so sad ?

Nero. Good cause I have, since pleasures pass, the
which should make me glad.

Clyo. What you should mean, O princess dear, hereby
I do not know.

Nero. Then listen to my talk a while, sir knight, and
I will show,

If case you will re-answer me my question to absolve,³

The which propound ⁴ within my mind doth oftentimes
revolve. 60

¹ "i.e. open, disclose."—*Dyce.*

² "Qy. 'go'?"—*P. A. Daniel.*

³ Old ed. "absolve."

⁴ "i.e. proposition."—*Dyce.* (Dr. Nicholson takes "propound" as
= propounded.—But cf. l. 72.)

Clyo. I will, O princess, answer you as aptly as I may.

Nero. Well, then, sir knight, apply your ears and listen what I say.

A ship, that storms had tossèd long amidst the mounting waves,

Where harbour none was to be had, fell Fortune so depraves,¹

Through ill success, that ship of hope, that anchor's hold doth fail,

Yet at the last she's driven to land with broken mast and sail,

And, through the force of furious wind and billows' bouncing blows,

She is a simple shipwreck made in every point, God knows.

Now this same ship by chance being found, the finders take such pain,

That fit to sail upon the seas they rig her up again, 70

And, where she was through storms sore shaken, they make her whole and sound :

Now answer me directly here upon this my propound,

If this same ship thus rent and torn, being brought in former rate,

Should not supply the finder's turn² to profit his estate In what she might.

Clyo. Herein a-right

¹ Deprives.

² "The 4to. 'true.' Compare sixth line of the next speech. —*Dyce.*

I will, O princess, as I may, directly answer you.
 This ship thus found, I put the case it hath an owner
 now ;

Which owner shall sufficiently content the finder's charge,
 And have again, to serve his use, his ship, his boat, or
 barge. 80

The ship, then, cannot serve the turn of finder,¹ this is
 plain,

If case the owner do content or pay him for his pain ;
 But otherwise if none lay claim nor seem that ship to stay,
 Then is it requisite it should the finder's pains repay
 For such endeavour, as it is to serve for his behoof.

Nero. What owner truly that it hath, I have no certain
 proof.

Clyo. Then can I not define thereof, but thus I wish
 it were,

That you would me accept to be that ship, O lady fair,
 And you the finder ! then it should be needless for to
 move

If I the ship of duty ought to serve at your behoove. 90

Nero. Thou art the ship, O worthy knight, so shiver'd
 found by me.

Clyo. And owner have I none, dear dame, I yield me
 whole to thee :

For as this ship, I must confess, that was a shipwreck
 made,

Thou hast restored me unto health whom sickness caused
 to vade ;

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. "finders."

For which I yield, O princess dear, at pleasure thine to be,
If your grace, O noble dame, will so accept of me!

Nero. If¹ case I will, what have you shown?

Clyo. Because I am to you unknown.

Nero. Your fame importeth what you be.

Clyo. You may your pleasure say of me. 100

Nero. What I have said due proof[s] do show.

Clyo. Well, lady dear, to thee I owe
More service than of duty I am able to profess,
For that thou didst preserve my life amidst my deep
distress :

But at this time I may not stay, O lady, here with thee :
Thou know'st the cause ; but this I vow, within three-
score days to be,

If destiny restrain me not, at court with thee again,
Protesting whilst that life doth last thine faithful to remain.

Nero. And is there, then, no remedy, but needs you
will depart?

Clyo. No, princess, for a certainty ; but here I leave
my heart 110

In gage with thee till my return, which, as I said, shall be.

Nero. Well, sith no persuasion may prevail, this jewel
take of me,

And keep it always for my sake. [*Gives jewel.*]

¹ This line and the next are obscure. "What have you shown?" means (I suppose) "How have you given proof of your love?" Clyomon parries the question—"I have been unable to give proof" because my vow forbids me to disclose my name and rank. You are a king's daughter and I am a nameless wandering knight." (But the text is perhaps corrupt.)

Clyo. Of¹ it a dear account I'll make :
 Yet let us part, dear dame, with joy,
 And to do the same I will myself employ.

Nero. Well, now adieu till thy return : the gods thy
 journey guide !

Clyo. And happily in absence mine for thee, dear
 dame, provide ! [*Exit* NERONIS.]

Ah Clyomon, let dolours die, drive daunts from out thy
 mind !

Since in the sight of Fortune now such favour thou dost
 find 120

As for to have the love of her, whom thou didst sooner
 judge

Would have denied thy loyalty and 'gainst thy good-will
 grudge.

But that I may here keep my day, you sacred gods,
 provide

Most happy fate unto my state, and thus my journey
 guide,

The which I 'tempt to take in hand Clamydes for to
 meet,

That the whole cause of my first let² to him I may
 repeat :

So shall I seem for to excuse myself in way of right,
 And not be counted of my foe a false perjurèd knight.

[*Exit.*]

¹ "Of it . . . joy"—one line in old ed.

² Hindrance.

[SCENE XII.]

Enter THRASELLUS, *King of Norway*, and two Lords.

Thra. Where deep desire hath taken root, my lords,
 alas, you see

How that persuasion booteth not, if contrary it be
 Unto the first expected hope where fancy¹ hath take place;
 And vain it is for to withdraw by counsel in that case
 The mind who with affection is to one only thing affected,
 The which may not till dint of death from thence² be
 sure rejected.

You know, my lords, through fame what force of love
 hath taken place

Within my breast as touching now Neronis' noble grace,
 Daughter to Patranus King, who doth the sceptre sway
 And in the Isle of Marshes eke bear rule now at this day:
 Through love³ of daughter his my sorrows daily grow, 11
 And daily dolours do me daunt, for that, alas, I show
 Such friendship whereas favour none is to be found again;
 And yet from out my careful mind naught may her love
 restrain.

I sent to crave her of the king; he answer'd me with nay:
 But shall I not provide by force to fetch her thence away?
 Yes, yes, my lords; and therefore let your aids be prest⁴
 with mine,

For I will sure Neronis have, or else my days I'll pine;⁵

¹ Love.

² So Dyce.—Old ed. "them."

³ "Qy. 'Thorough the love'?"—*P. A. Daniel.*

⁴ Ready.

⁵ "Qy. 'fine' (*i.e.*, end)?"—*P. A. Daniel.*

For King Patranius and his power I hold of small
account :

To win his daughter to my spouse amidst his men I'll
mount. 20

First Lord. Most worthy prince, this rash attempt I
hold not for the best,

For sure Patranius' power is great and not to be suppress ;
For why¹ the isle environ'd is with sea on every side,
And landing-place, lo, is there none whereas you may
have tide

To set your men from ship to shore, but by one only way,
And in that place a garrison great he keepeth at this day ;
So that if you should bring your power, your travail
were in vain :

That is not certainly the way Neronis for to gain.

But this your grace may do indeed, and so I count it
best ;

To be in all points with a ship most like a merchant
prest, 30

And sail with such as you think best, all dress'd in
merchants' guise,

And for to get her to your ship some secret mean devise,
By showing of strange merchandise, or other such like
thing :

Lo, this is best advice I can, Thrasellus, lord and king.

Second Lord. And certainly, as you have said, my
lord, it is the way :—

Wherefore, O king, do prosecute the same without delay.

¹ "For why"—because.

Thra. Of truth, my lords, this your advice doth for our purpose frame :

Come, therefore, let us hence depart to put in ure¹ the same

With present speed, for merchant-wise myself will thither sail.

First Lord. This is the way, if any be, of purpose to prevail [Exeunt. 40

[SCENE XIII.]

Enter CLYOMON with a Knight, signifying one of those that CLAMYDES had delivered.

Clyo. Sir knight, of truth this fortune was most luckily assign'd,

That we should meet in travel thus, for thereby to my mind

You have a castle of comfort² brought in that you have me told

Clamydes our appointed day no more than I did hold.

Knight. No, certis, sir, he kept not day, the cause I have express'd,

Through that enchanter Bryan's charms he came full sore distress'd ;

Yet fortune favour'd so his state that through his help all we,

Which captives were through cowardly craft, from bondage were set free ;

¹ "Put in ure"—put in practice.

² "Castle of comfort"—a proverbial expression. One of Thomas Becon's works bears this title.

And at our parting willèd¹ us, if any with you met,
 We should inform you with the truth what was his only
 let. 10

Clyo. Well, know you where he abideth now, sir
 knight, I crave of courtesy.

Knight. No, questionless, I know not I, to say it of a
 certainty.

Clyo. Well, then, adieu, sir knight, with thanks; I let
 you on your way.

Knight. Unto the gods I you commit; naught else I
 have to say. [Exit.

Clyo. A[h] sirrah, now the hugy heaps of cares that
 lodgèd in my mind
 Are scalèd² from their nestling-place, and pleasures
 passage find,

For that, as well as Clyomon, Clamydes broke his day;
 Upon which news my passage now in seeking him I'll stay,
 And to Neronis back again my joyful journey make,
 Lest that she should in absence mine some cause of
 sorrow take: 20

And now all dumps of deadly dole that daunted knightly
 breast,

Adieu, since salve of solace sweet hath sorrows all
 supprest.

For that Clamydes cannot brag nor me accuse in ought,
 Unto the gods of destinies, that thus our fates have
 brought

¹ *i.e.* Clamydes willed, desired.

² "*i.e.* separated, dispersed."—*Dyce*.

In equal balance to be weigh'd, due praises shall I
 send,
 That thus to weigh each cause a-right their eyes to earth
 did bend.
 Well, to keep my day with lady now I mind not to be slack,
 Wherefore unto Patranus' court I'll dress my journey
 back :
 But stay, methinks I Rumour hear throughout this land
 to ring ;
 I will attend his talk to know what tidings he doth
 bring. 30

*Enter RUMOUR*¹ *running.*

Rum. Ye rolling clouds, give Rumour room, both air
 and earth below,
 By sea and land, that every ear may understand and
 know
 What woful hap is chancèd now, within the Isle of late,
 Which of Strange Marshes beareth name, unto the
 noblest state.
 Neronis, daughter to the king, by the King of Norway he
 Within a ship of merchandise convey'd away is she.
 The king with sorrow for her sake hath [un]to death re-
 sign'd ;
 And having left his queen with child to guide the realm
 behind,

¹ "Compare *The Induction* to Shakespeare's *Henry IV., Part Second.*"—*Dyce.*

Mustantius, brother to the king, from her the crown
would take;

But till she be deliverèd the lords did order make 40
That they before King Alexander thither coming should
appeal,

And he, by whom they hold the crown, therein should
rightly deal

For either part: lo, this to tell I Rumour have in
charge,

And through all lands I do pretend¹ to publish it at
large. [*Exit.*

Clyo. Ah, woful Rumour ranging thus! what tidings
do I hear?

Hath that false King of Norway stoln my love and lady
dear?

Ah heart, ah hand, ah head, and mind, and every sense
beside,

To serve your master's turn in need do every one
provide!

For till that I revengèd be upon that wretched king,

And have again my lady dear and her from Norway
bring, 50

I vow this body takes no rest. Ah Fortune, fickle
dame,

That canst make glad and so soon sad a knight of
worthy fame!

But what should I delay the time, now that my dear is
gone?

¹ Intend.

Avaieth aught to ease my grief, to make this pensive
moan ?

No, no ;¹

Wherefore come, courage, to my heart, and, happy
hands, prepare ?

For of that wretched king I will wreak all my sorrow
and care,

And, maugre all the might he may be able for to make,
By force of arms my lady I from him and his will take.

[*Exit.*

[SCENE XIV.]

Enter CLAMYDES and SHIFT with his bag of money still.

Clam. Come, Knowledge, thou art much to blame
thus for to load thyself,

To make thee on thy way diseased with carrying of that
pelf.

But now take courage unto thee, for to that Isle I will
Which of Strange Marshes callèd is ; for fame declareth
still

The Knight of the Golden Shield is there and in the
court abideth :

Thither will I him to meet, whatsoever me betideth,
And know his name, as, thou canst tell, my father
chargèd me,

Or else no more his princely court nor person for
to see.

¹ " No, no ;"—printed as part of the following line in old ed.

Come, therefore, that unto that isle we may our journey
take,

And afterwards, having met with him, our viage¹ for to
make

10

To Denmark, to my lady there, to show her all my case,
And then to Suavia, if her I have, unto my father's
grace.

S. Shift. Nay, but, and't shall please you, are you sure
the Knight of the Golden Shield in the Isle of
Strange Marshes is?

Clam. I was informèd credibly; I warrant thee, we
shall not miss.

S. Shift. Then keep on your way; I'll follow as fast
as I can.

[Exit CLAMYDES.]

Faith, he even means to make a martris² of poor Shift
his man :

And I am so tied to this bag of gold I got at Bryan
Sans-foy's,

That, I tell you, where this is, there all my joy is.

But I am so weary, sometimes with riding, sometimes
with running, and other times going a-foot,

20

That, when I come³ to my lodging at night, to bring
me a woman it is no boot;

And such care I take for this pelf, lest I should it lose,
That where I come, that it is gold for my life I dare not
disclose.

¹ Voyage.

² "*i.e.* (I suppose) martyr."—*Dyce*.

³ So *Dyce*.—Old ed. "came."

Well, after my master I must : here's nothing still but
running and riding ;
But I'll give him the slip, sure, if I once come where I
may have quiet biding. [Exit.

[SCENE XV.]

Enter NERONIS in the forest, in man's apparel.

Nero. As hare the hound, as lamb the wolf, as fowl
the falcon's dint,
So do I fly from tyrant he, whose heart more hard than
flint
Hath sack'd¹ on me such hugy heaps of ceaseless
sorrows here,
That sure it is intolerable the torments that I bear.
Neronis, ah, who knoweth thee a princess to be born,
Since fatal gods so frowardly thy fortune do adorn?
Neronis, ah, who knoweth her in painful page's show?
But no good lady will me blame which of my case doth
know,
But rather, when they hear the truth wherefore I am
disguised,
They'll say it is an honest shift the which I have devised ;
Since I have given my faith and troth to such a bruit of
fame 11
As is the Knight of the Golden Shield, and tyrants seek
to frame

¹ See note 2, p. 139.

Their engines to detract¹ our vows, as the King of
 Norway hath,
 Who of all princes living now I find devoid of faith :
 For, like a wolf in lambskin clad, he cometh with his aid,
 All merchant-like, to father's court, and 'ginneeth to
 persuade
 That he had precious jewels brought,² which in his ship
 did lie,
 Whereof he will'd me take my choice, if case I would
 them buy ;
 Then I, mistrusting no deceit, with handmaids one or
 two,
 With this deceitful merchant then unto the ship did go.
 No sooner were we under hatch but up they hois'd
 their sail, 21
 And, having then to serve their turn a merry western gale,
 We were lash'd out from the haven, lo, a dozen leagues
 and more,
 When still I thought the bark had been at anchor by
 the shore.
 But being brought by Norway here, not long in court I
 was,
 But that to get from thence away I brought this feat to
 pass ;
 For making semblance unto him as though I did him
 love,
 He gave me liberty or aught that served for my behove ;

¹ Dissever.

² So Dyce.—Old ed. "bought."

And having liberty, I wrought by such a secret slight,
That in this tire like to a page I scaped away by
night.

But, ah, I fear that by pursuit he will me overtake! 31
Well, here ent'reth one to whom some suit for service I
will make.

Enter CORIN, a shepherd [and his dog].

Cor. Go's bones,¹ turn in that sheep there, and you
be good fellows!—Jesu, how cham² beray'd!³
Chave a cur here, and a were⁴ my vellow, cha must him
conswade;
And yet and cha should kiss, look you, of the arse, cha
must run myself and chill,
And cha should entreat him with my cap in my hand,
ha wad stand still.
But 'tis a world⁵ to zee what merry lives we shepherds
lead;
Why, we're gentlemen and we get once a thornbush
over our head;
We may sleep with our vaces against the zon, and were
hogs,⁶
Bathe ourselves, stretch out our legs, and 'twere a
kennel of dogs; 40

¹ "Go's bones"—God's bones.

² "Cham"—rustic form of "I am." Presently we have "cha" (= "I"), "chave" (= "I have"), "chill" (= "I will"), and "chould" (= "I would").

³ Befouled.

⁴ "And a were"—*i.e.* as if he (the dog) were. ⁵ *i.e.* wonder to see.

⁶ "And were hogs"—*i.e.* as if we were hogs.

And then at night, when maids come to milking, the games begin :

But I may zay to you, my neighbour Hodge's¹ maid had a clap,—well, let them laugh that win !

Chave but one daughter, but chould not vor vorty pence she were zo sped ;

Cha may zay to you, she looks every night to go to bed :

But 'tis no matter, the whores be so whiskish when they're under a bush,

That they're never satisfied till their bellies be flush.

Well, cha must abroad about my flocks, lest the fen-geance wolves catch a lamb,

Vor, by my cursen² zoul, they'll steal and cha stand by ;³ they're not averd of the dam.

Nero. [*aside.*] Well, to scape the pursuit of the king, of this same shepther here,

Suspicion wholly to avoid, for service I'll inquire.— 50

Well met, good father : for your use a servant do you lack ?

Cor. What, you will not flout an old man, you court-nold⁴ Jack ?

Nero. No, truly, father, I flout you not ; what I ask, I would have.

¹ "The 4to here 'Hogs,' but afterwards '*Hodges.*'"—*Dyce.*

² Christened.

³ "Qy. 'stand not by'?"—*Dyce.*

⁴ A clownish term for a courtier.—Cf. Day and Chettle's *Blind Beggar*, Act IV., "But hark ye, father, you must know I am to go amongst the *court-nowles.*"

Cor. Go's bones, thee¹ leest : serve a shepherd and
be zo brave?²

You courtnoll crackropes,³ wod be hang'd! you do
nothing now and then

But come up and down the country, thus to flout poor
men.

Go to, goodman boy ; chave no zervice vor no zuch
flouting Jacks as you be.

Nero. Father, I think as I speak ; upon my faith and
troth, believe me ;

I will willingly serve you, if in case you will take me.

Cor. Dost not mock ?

Nero. No, trully, father.

Cor. Then come with me ; by Go's bones, chill never
vorsake thee. 60

Whow, bones of my zoul, thou'lt be the bravest shep-
herd's boy in our town ;

Thous go to church in this coat bevore Madge a Sunday
in her grey gown :

Good Lord, how our church-wardens will look upon
thee ! bones of God, zeest,

There will be more looking at thee than our Sir John
the parish-priest ;

Why, every body will ask whose boy thou'rt ; and cha
can tell thee this by the way,

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. "they." ("Leest" = liest.)

² Finely attired.

³ "Pendant. A rakehell, *crackrope*, gallow-clapper ; one for whom
the gallows longeth."—*Cotgrave*.

Thou shalt have all the varest wenches of our town in
the yields vor to play ;
There's neighbour Nichol's daughter, a jolly smug whore
with vat cheeks,
And neighbour Hodge's maid—meddle not with her, she
hath eaten set¹ leeks,—
But there's Frumpton's wench in the frieze sack,² it will
do thee good to see
What canvosing is at the milking-time between her and
me ; 70
And those wenches will love thee bonomably³ in "every
place,
But do not vall in with them in any kind of case.

Nero. Tush, you shall not need to fear me : I can be
merry with measure as well as they.

Cor. Well, then, come follow after me, and home
chill lead thee the way. [Exit.]

Nero. Alas, poor simple shepherd ! by this princes
may see

That, like man, like talk, in every degree. [Exit.]⁴

¹ "Porreau testu. The headed or knobbed leeke, *set leeke*, uncut
leeke."—*Cotgrave*.

² "i.e. a sort of loose upper-dress.—The 4to 'scake.'"—*Dyce*.

³ A corruption of "abominably."

⁴ Old ed. "Exeunt."

[SCENE XVI.]

Enter THRASELLUS, *King of Norway, and two Lords.*

Thra. My lords, pursue her speedily, she cannot far
be gone ;
And, lo, himself to seek her out, your king he will be
one.
Ah fraudulent dame, how hath she glozed from me to
get away !
With sugred words how hath she fed my senses night
and day !
Professing love with outward shows, and inwardly her
heart
To practise such a deep deceit, whereby she might
depart
From out my court so suddenly, when I did wholly
judge
She loved me most entirely and not against me grudge,
She made such signs by outward shows ! I blame not
wit and policy,
But here I may exclaim and say, “ Fie, fie, on women’s
subtilty ! ” 10
Well, well, my lords, no time delay, pursue her with all
speed,
And I this forest will seek out myself, as is decreed,
With aid of such as are behind and will come unto me.

Both Lords. We shall not slack what here in charge
to us is given by thee. [*Exeunt.*

Thra. Ah subtle Neronis, how hast thou me vex'd !
 Through thy crafty dealings how am I perplex'd !
 Did ever any win a dame and lose her in such sort ?
 The maladies are marvellous the which I do support
 Through her deceit ; but forth I will my company to
 meet :

If ever she be caught again, I will her so entreat¹ 20
 That others all shall warning take by such a subtle dame,
 How that a prince for to delude such engines they do
 frame.

Enter CLYOMON, Knight of the Golden Shield.

Clyo. Nay, traitor, stay, and take with thee that mortal
 blow or stroke
 The which shall cause thy wretched corps this life for
 to revoke :²
 It joyeth me at the heart that I have met thee in this
 place.

Thra. What, varlet, dar'st thou be so bold with words
 in such a case
 For to upbraid thy lord and king ? what art thou, soon
 declare.

Clyo. My lord and king I thee defy ;³ and in despite
 I dare
 Thee for to say, thou art no prince, for thou a traitor art ;
 And what reward is due therefore, to thee I shall impart.

¹ Treat.

² “ *i.e.* renounce.”—*Dyce.*

³ “ “ My lord and king I thee defy ’—*i.e.* I reject you for my lord and king.”—*Dyce.*

Thra. Thou braggest all too boldly still : what hight
thy name, express. 31

Clyo. What hight my name thou shalt not know, ne
will I it confess ;

But for that thou my lady stolest from father's court
away,

I'll sure revenge that traitorous fact upon thy flesh this
day,

Since I have met so luckily with thee here all alone, †
Although, as I do understand, from thee she now is gone ;
Yet therefore do defend thyself, for here I thee assail.

Thra. Alas, poor boy, thinkest thou against me to
prevail ?

Here let them fight ; the King fall down dead.

Thra. Ah heavens, Thrasellus he is slain !—Ye gods,
his ghost receive ! [Dies.]

Clyo. Now hast thou justice for thy fact, as thy desert
doth crave. 40

But, ah, alas, poor Clyomon, though thou thy foe hast
slain,

Such grievous wounds thou hast received as do increase
thy pain :

Unless I have some speedy help, my life must needly¹
waste,

And then, as well as traitor false, my corps of death
shall taste.

¹ Necessarily.

Ah my Neronis, where art thou? ah, where art thou become?
For thy sweet sake thy knight shall here receive his vital
doom :

Lo, here, all gorèd in [his] blood, thy faithful knight
doth lie !

For thee, ah faithful dame, thy knight for lack of help
shall die !

For thee, ah, here thy Clyomon his mortal stroke hath
ta'en !

For thee, ah, these same hands of his the Norway King
have slain !

Ah, bleeding wounds from longer talk my foltring¹
tongue do stay,

And, if I have not speedy help, my life doth waste away !

Enter Father CORIN, *the shepherd, and his dog.*

Cor. A plague on thee for a cur ! a ha driven my²
sheep above from the flock :

Ah thief, art not ashamed ? I'll beat thee like a stock ;³

And cha been a-zeeking here above vour miles and more :

But chill tell you what, chave the bravest lad of Jack
the courtnoll that ever was zeen bevore.

Ah, the whorecop⁴ is plaguily well loved in our town !

And you had zeen go to church bevore Madge my wife
in her holiday gown,

¹ Faltering. Cf. Seneca's *Ten Tragedies*, 1581, fo. 62, " Her foltring legs do stagger now."

² So Dyce.—Old ed. " me " (which might perhaps be retained).

³ Stock-fish (dried cod)—which was beaten before it was boiled.

⁴ Bastard.

You would have bless'd yourzelves t'ave seen it: she
went even cheek by jowl

With our head-controm's¹ wife, brother to my neighbour
Nichol; 60

You know ha dwells by Master Justice over the water on
the other side of the hill,

Cham zure you know it, between my neighbour Filcher's
varm-house and the wind-mill.

But and you did zee how Joan Jenkin and Gillian Geffrey
love my boy Jack,—

Why, it is marvellation to see; Joan did so baste Gillian's
back,

That, by Go's bones, I laugh'd till cha be-piss'd myzelf
when cha zaw it:

All the maids in town valls out for my boy, but and the
young men know it,

They'll be zo jealisom over them, that cham in doubt

Ich shall not keep Jack my boy till seven years go
about.

Well, cham ne'er the near² vor my sheep, chave sought
it this vour mile;

But chill home and send Jack foorth to zeek it another
while. 70

But, bones of God, man, stay! Jesu, whather wilt? wha,
what mean'st lie here?

Clyo. Ah, good father, help me!

¹ "'Controm's'—*i.e.* perhaps comptor's, countor's—(auditor of some sort)."—*Dyce.* (Qy. a corruption of "constable's"?)

² "Ne'er the near"—never the nearer.

Cor. Nay, who there,¹ by your leave! chill not come near.—

What, another? bones of me, he is either kill'd or dead!—
Nay, vaward: vorty pence,² ye're a knave!—Go's death,
'a doth bleed!

Clyo. I bleed, indeed, father; so grievous my wounds be,
That if I have not speedy help, long life is not in me.

Cor. Why, what art thou? or how chanced thou
camest in this case?

Clyo. Ah father, that dead corps which thou seest
there in place,
He was a knight and mine enemy whom here I have
slain, So
And I a gentleman whom he hath wounded with mar-
vellous pain.

Now thou knowest the truth, good father, show some
courtesy

To stop my bleeding wounds, that I may find some
remedy

My life to preserve, if possible I may.

Cor. Well, here you, gentleman, should have you
know this by the way,

Cham but vather Corin the shepherd, cham no sur-
inger³ I;

But chill do what cha can vor you, cha were loth to see
you die.

¹ "Who there"—*i.e.* ho there, stay there.—*Dyce.*

² *i.e.* I will lay forty pence.—See *Dyce's Shakesp. Gloss.*

³ "*i.e.* surgeon."—*Dyce.* (Dr. Brinsley Nicholson suggests that *Suringer* = "syringer, one who administers clysters, &c.")

Lo, how zay you by this? [*Raises him*¹] have cha
done you any ease?

Clyo. Father, thy willingness of a certainty doth me
much please.

But, good father, lend me thy helping hand once again,
To bury this same knight whom here I have slain : 91
Although he was to me a most deadly enemy,
Yet to leave his body unburied were great cruelty.

Cor. Bones of God, man, our priest dwells too far away.

Clyo. Well, then, for want of a priest, the priest's part
I will play :

Therefore, father, help me to lay his body aright,
For I will bestow a hearse of him because he was a
knight,

If thou wilt go to a cottage hereby and fetch such things
as I lack.

Cor. That chill, gentleman, and by and by return
back. [*Exit.*

Clyo. But, Clyomon, pluck up thy heart with courage
once again ; 100

And I will set o'er his dead corse, in sign of victory
[plain],²

My golden shield, and sword but with the point hanging
down,

As one conquer'd and lost his renown,
Writing likewise thereupon, that all passengers may see,
That the false King of Norway here lieth slain by me.

¹ There is no stage-direction in old ed.

² The bracketed word was added by Dyce.

*Re-enter CORIN with a hearse.*¹

Cor. Lo, gentleman, cha brought zuch things as are requisite for the zame.

Clyo. Then, good father, help me the hearse for to frame.

[*Cor.*] That² chall, gentleman, in the best order that cha may.

O, that our parish-priest were here ! that you might here him say ;

Vor,³ by Go's bones, and there be any noise in the church, in the midst of his prayers he'll swear : 110

Ah, he loves hunting a-life !⁴ would to God you were acquainted with him a while :

And as vor a woman,—well, chill zay nothing, but cha know whom he did beguile.

Clyo. Well, father Corin, let that pass, we have nothing to do withal⁵ :

And now that this is done, come, reward thy pain I shall ;
There is part of a recompense thy good-will to requite.

[*Gives money.*]

¹ *Hearse* was formerly used in the sense of *monument*. Cf. *Tryal of Chivalry*, iv. 1 :—

“ And hang thy shield up to adorn his *hearse*,”

—where the hearse was an alabaster monument. Corin re-enters bearing stakes and branches for constructing a rude trophy.

² So Dyce.—Old ed. “ Chat.”

³ This unwieldy line has nothing to rhyme with it. Seemingly two lines have been knocked into one.

⁴ *i.e.* as his life.

⁵ “ We have nothing to do withal ”—*i.e.* we cannot help it ; the parish priest's doings are no concern of ours.

Cor. By my troth, cha thank you, cham bound to pray
vor you day and night :

And now chill even home, and send Jack my boy this
sheep to seek out.

Clyo. Tell me, father, ere thou goest, didst thou not
see a lady wandering here about ?

Cor. A lady ! no, good vaith, gentleman, cha zaw none,
cha tell you plain. 119

Clyo. Well, then, farewell, father ; gramercies for thy
pain. [*Exit* CORIN.]

Ah Neronis, where thou art or where thou dost abide,
Thy Clyomon to seek thee out shall rest no time nor
tide !

Thy foe here lieth slain on ground, and living is thy
friend,

Whose travel till he see thy face shall never have an end.
My ensign here I leave behind ; these verses writ shall
yield

A true report of traitor slain by the Knight of the Golden
Shield ;

And, as unknown to any wight, to travel I betake,
Until I may her find whose sight my heart may joyful
make. [*Exit.*

[SCENE XVII.]

*Enter SHIFT very brave.*¹

S. Shift. Jesu, what a gazing do you make at me to
 see me in a gown !
 Do you not know, after travel men being in court or in
 town,
 And specially such as are of any reputation, they must
 use this guise,
 Which signifieth a fool to be sage, grave, and of counsel
 wise ?
 But where are we, think you now, that Shift is so brave ?
 Not running to seek the Knight of the Golden Shield ;
 another office I have ;
 For coming here to the court of Strange Marshes so
 named,
 Where King Alexander in his own person lies, that prince
 mightily famed,
 Between Mustantius brother to the late king deceased,
 And the queen, through King Alexander, a strife was
 appeased, 10
 But how or which way I think you do not know :
 Well, then, give ear to my tale, and the truth I will show.
 The old king being dead through sorrow for Neronis,
 Whom we do hear lover² to the Knight of the Golden
 Shield is,

¹ Finely attired.² Old poets applied the term "lover" to women as well as to men.

The queen, being with child, the sceptre askèd to
 sway,
 But Mustantius the king's brother he did it deny,
 Whereof great contention grew amongst the nobles on
 either side ;
 But being by them agreed the judgment to abide
 Of King Alexander the Great, who then was coming
 hither, 19
 At his arrival to the court they all were call'd together :
 The matter being heard, this sentence was given,¹
 That either party should have a champion to combat
 them between,
 That which champion were overcome, the other should
 sway,
 And to be foughten after that time the sixteen day.
 Now, my master Clamydes coming hither, for Mustantius
 will he be ;
 But upon the queen's side to venter none can we
 see,
 And yet she maketh proclamation through every land
 To give great gifts to any that will take the combat in
 hand.
 Well, within ten days is the time, and King Alexander he
 Stayeth till the day appointed the trial to see ; 30
 And if none come² at the day for the queen to fight,
 Then, without travail to my master, Mustantius hath his
 right.

¹ "To be pronounced 'gi'en' for the rhyme."—*Dyce*.

² So *Dyce*.—Old ed. "came."

But to see all things in a readiness against th' appointed
 day,
 Like a shifting knave, for advantage to court I'll take my
 way. [*Exit.*

[SCENE XVIII.]

Enter NERONIS like a shepherd's boy.

Nero. The painful paths, the weary ways, the travails
 and ill fare,
 That¹ simple feat to princess seem in practice very rare,
 As I, poor dame, whose pensive heart no pleasure can
 delight
 Since that my state so cruelly fell Fortune holds in
 spite.
 Ah poor Neronis, in thy hand is this² a seemly show,
 Who shouldst in court thy lute supply where pleasures
 erst did flow?
 Is this an instrument for thee, to guide a shepherd's
 flock,
 That art a princess by thy birth and born of noble
 stock?
 May mind from mourning more refrain, to think on
 former state?
 May heart from sighing eke abstain, to see this simple
 rate? 10

¹ The text is corrupt. ("Qy. 'That simple *feel*,' i.e., 'that simple folks feel'?"—*P. A. Daniel.*)

² She points to her sheep-crook.

May eyes from down-distilling tears, when thus alone¹
 I am,

Resistance make, but must they not through ceaseless
 sorrows frame

A river of bedewèd drops for to distain² my face?

Ah heavens, when you're revenged enough, then look
 upon my case!

For till I hear some news, alas, upon my loving knight,
 I dare not leave this loathsome life for fear of greater
 spite:

And now, as did my master will, a³ sheep that is astray
 I must go seek her out again by wild and weary way.—

Ah woful sight! what is, alas, with these mine eyes
 beheld?

That to my loving knight belong'd I view the golden
 shield. 20

Ah heavens, this hearse doth signify my knight [alas] is
 slain!

Ah death, no longer do delay, but rid the lives of
 twain!

Heart, hand, and every sense, prepare, unto the hearse
 draw nigh,

And thereupon submit yourselves; disdain not for to die
 With him that was your mistress' joy, her life and death
 like case;

And well I know in seeking me he did his end embrace;

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. "a loue."

² Old ed. "distill." (Dyce reads "A river of *distilled* drops for to
bedew my face.")

³ So Dyce.—Old ed. "as."

That cruel wretch, that Norway King, this cursèd deed
 hath done :
 But now to cut that lingering thread that Lachis¹ long
 hath spun,
 The sword of this my loving knight, behold, I here do
 take,
 Of this my woful corps, alas, a final end to make ! 30
 Yet, ere I strike that deadly stroke that shall my life
 deprave,²
 Ye Muses, aid me to the gods for mercy first to crave !
[*Sing here.*]
 Well, now, you heavens, receive my ghost ! my corps I
 leave behind,
 To be enclosed with his in earth by those that shall it
 find.

Descend PROVIDENCE.

Prov. Stay, stay thy stroke, thou woful dame : what
 wilt thou thus despair ?
 Behold, to let³ this wilful fact, I, Providence prepare⁴
 To thee from seat of mighty Jove. Look hereupon
 again ;
 Read that, if case thou canst it read, and see if he be
 slain
 Whom thou dost love.
Nero. [*after reading the verses on the hearse*⁵]. Ah
 heavens above, 40

¹ Contraction for "Lachesis."

² Deprive.

³ Hinder.

⁴ See note 2, p. 143.

⁵ No stage-direction in old ed.

All laud and praise and honour due to you I here do
render,

That would vouchsafe your handmaid here in woful
state to tender!

But¹ by these same verses do I find my faithful knight
doth live,

Whose hand unto my deadly foe the mortal stroke did
give,

Whose cursèd carcass, lo, it is which here on ground
doth lie :

Ah, honour due for this I yield to mighty Jove on high !

Prov. Well, let desperation die in thee : I may not
here remain,

But be assurèd that thou shalt erelong thy knight
attain. [*Ascend.*

Nero. And for their providence divine the gods above
I'll praise,

And show their works so wonderful unto their laud
always. 50

Well, sith that the gods by providence have 'signèd unto me
Such comfort sweet in my distress, my knight again to
see,

Farewell all feeding shepherd's flocks, unseemly for my
state ;

To seek my love I will set forth in hope of friendly fate :

But first to shepherd's house I will, my page's tire to take,

And afterwards depart from thence my journey for to
make. [*Exit.*

¹ It would be well to omit " But."

[SCENE XIX.]

Enter Sir CLYOMON.

Clyo. Long have I sought, but all in vain, for neither
 far nor near
 Of my Neronis, woful dame, by no means can I hear.
 Did ever fortune violate two lovers in such sort?
 The griefs, ah, are intolerable the which I do support
 For want of her! but hope somewhat revives my pensive
 heart,
 And doth to me some sudden cause of comfort now
 impart
 Through news I hear, as I abroad in weary travel went;
 How that the queen her mother hath her proclamations
 sent
 Through every land, to get a knight to combat on her
 side,
 Against Mustantius duke and lord to have a matter
 tried; 10
 And now the day is very nigh, as I do understand:
 In hope to meet my lady there I will into that land,
 And for her mother undertake the combat for to try,
 Yea, though the other Hector were, I would him not
 deny,
 Whatsoever he be: but, ere I go, a golden shield I'll
 have;
 Although unknown, I will come in as doth my knight-
 hood crave;

But cover'd will I keep my shield, because I'll not be
known,
If case my lady be in place, till I have prowess shown.
Well, to have my shield in readiness, I will no time delay,
And then to combat for the queen I straight will take
my way. [*Exit.* 20

[SCENE XX.]

Enter NERONIS like the page.

Nero. Ah weary paces that I walk with steps unsteady
still!
Of all the gripes of grisly griefs Neronis hath her fill:
And yet amidst these miseries which were my first
mishaps,
By bruit I hear such news, alas, as more and more
enwraps
My wretched corps with thousand woes more than I
may support;
So that I am to be comparèd unto the scalèd fort,
Which doth, so long as men and might and sustenance
prevail,
Give to the enemies repulse that cometh to assail,
But when assistance¹ 'gins to fail, and strength of foes
increase,
They forcèd are through battering blows the same for to
release: 10

¹ "Qy. 'subsistence'?"—*P. A. Daniel.*

So likewise I, so long as hope my comfort did remain,
 The grisly griefs that me assail'd I did repulse again,
 But now that hope begins to fail, and griefs anew do
 rise,
 I must of force yield up the fort, I can no way devise
 To keep the same; the fort I mean it is the weary
 corse
 Which sorrows daily do assail and siege without
 remorse.¹
 And now, to make my griefs the more, report, alas, hath
 told
 How that my father's agèd bones are shrinèd up in
 mould,
 Since Norway King did me betray, and that my mother
 she
 Through Duke Mustantius uncle mine in great distress
 to be
 For swaying of the sceptre there: what should I herein 20
 say?
 Now that I cannot find my knight, I would at combat-
 day
 Be gladly there, if case I could with some good master
 meet,
 That as his page in these affairs would seem me to
 entreat:²—
 And in good time here cometh one; he seems a knight
 to be;
 I'll proffer service, if in case he will accept of me.

¹ Pity.

² Treat.

Enter CLYOMON *with his shield covered, strangely disguised.*

Clyo. Well, now, as one unknown, I will go combat
for the queen :

Who can bewray me since my shield is not for to be
seen ?

But stay, who do I here espy ? of truth a proper boy :
If case he do a master lack, he shall sustain no noy,¹ 30
For why² in these affairs he may stand me in passing
stead.

Nero. [*aside.*] Well, I see to pass upon my way this
gentleman's decreed :

To him I will submit myself in service for to be,
If case he can his fancy frame to like so well on me.—
Well met, sir knight, upon your way.

Clyo. My boy, gramercies ; but to me say
Into what country is thy journey dight ?

Nero. Towards the Strange Marshe[s], of truth, sir
knight.

Clyo. And thither am I going ; high Jove be my guide !

Nero. Would gods I were worthy to be your page by
your side ! 40

Clyo. My page, my boy ! why, what is thy name ?
that let me hear.

Nero. Sir knight, by name I am callèd Cœur-d'acier.

Clyo. Cœur-d'acier ! what, Heart of Steel ? now, certis,
my boy,

I am a gentleman, and do entertain thee with joy ;

¹ Hurt.

² "For why"—because.

And to the Strange Marshes am I going, the queen to defend :

Come, therefore, for, without more saying, with me thou shalt wend.

Nero. As diligent to do my duty as any in this land. [Exit CLYOMON.]

Ah Fortune, how favourably my friend doth she stand !

For thus, no man knowing mine estate nor degree,

May I pass safely a page as you see. [Exit. 50]

[SCENE XXI.]

Enter BRYAN SANS-FOY *with the head.*

B. Sans-foy. Even as the owl that hides her head in hollow tree till night,

And dares not, while Sir Phœbus shines, attempt abroad in flight,

So likewise I, as buzzard bold, while cheerful day is seen,
Am forced with owl to hide myself amongst the ivy green,

And dare¹ not with the sely snail from cabin show my head,

Till Vesper I behold aloft in skies begin to spread,

And then, as owl that flies abroad when other fowls do rest,

I creep out of my drowsy den when Somnus² hath suppress

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. "dares." ² So Dyce.—Old ed. "summons."

The head of every valiant heart ; lo, thus I shroud the
 day,
 And travel, as the owl, by night upon my wishèd way ; 10
 The which hath made more tedious my journey by half
 part :
 But blame not Bryan ; blame, alas, his cowardly caitiff's
 heart,
 Which dares not show itself by day for fear of worthy
 wights,
 For none can travel openly t' escape the venturous
 knights,
 Unless he have a noble mind and eke a valiant heart,
 The which I will not brag upon, I assure you, for my
 part ;
 For if the courage were in me the which in other is,
 I doubtless had enjoy'd the wight whom I do love ere
 this.
 Well, I have not long to travel now, to Denmark I
 draw nigh,
 Bearing Knight Clamydes' name, yet Brian Sans-foy
 am I ;
 But though I do usurp his name his shield or ensign
 here, 21
 Yet can I not usurp his heart, still Bryan's heart I bear :
 Well, I force¹ not that ; he's safe enough ; and Bryan,
 as I am,
 I will unto the court whereas I shall enjoy that dame.

[*Exit.*

¹ Regard.

[SCENE XXII.]

*Enter SHIFT like a whiffler.*¹

S. Shift. Room there for a reckoning! see, I beseech you, if they'll stand out of the way!
 Jesu, Jesu, why, do you not know that this is the day
 That the combat must pass for Mustantius and the
 queen?
 But to fight upon her side as yet no champion is seen;
 And Duke Mustantius he smiles in his sleeve because
 he doth see
 That neither for love nor rewards any one her champion
 will be:
 And 'twere not but that my master the other champion is,
 To fight for the queen myself I surely would not miss.
 Alas, good lady! she and her child are like to lose all
 the land
 Because none will come in in her defence for to stand;
 For where² she was in election, if any champion had
 come, II
 To rule till she was deliver'd and have the prince's room,
 Now shall Duke Mustantius be sure the sceptre to sway,
 If that none do come in to fight in her cause this day;
 And King Alexander all this while hath he stay'd the
 trial to see:
 Well, here they come.—Room there for the king! here's
 such thrusting of women as it grieveth me.

¹ An officer who went before in a procession.² Whereas.

Enter KING ALEXANDER, the QUEEN [*of the Isle of Strange Marshes,*] MUSTANTIUS, two Lords, and CLAMYDES like a champion.

Must. O Alexander, lo, behold, before thy royal grace
My champion here at 'pointed day I do present in place.

K. Alex. Well, sir duke, in your defence is he content
to be ?

Clam. Yea, worthy prince, not fearing who encounter
shall with me ; 20
Although he were with Hercules of equal power and might,
Yet in the cause of this same duke I challenge him the
fight.

K. Alex. I like your courage well, sir knight ; what
shall we call your name ?

Clam. Clamydes, son to the Suavian King, O prince,
so hight the same.

K. Alex. Now certainly I am right glad, Clamydes,
for to see

Such valiant courage to remain within the mind of thee.—
Well, lady,¹

According to the order ta'en herein, what do you say ?
Have you your champion in like case now ready at the
day ?

Queen of the S. M. No, sure, O king, no champion I
have for to aid my cause, 30
Unless 'twill please your noble grace on further day to
pause ;

¹ "Well, lady,"—printed as part of the following line in old ed.

For I have sent throughout this isle and every foreign
land,

But none as yet hath profferèd to take the same in hand.

K. Alex. No? I am more sorry certainly your chance
to see so ill,

But day deferièd cannot be unless Mustantius will,
For that his champion ready here in place he doth
present;

And whoso missèd at this day should lose, by full
consent

Of either part, the title, right, and sway of regal mace :
To this was your consentment given as well as his in
place,

And therefore without his assent we cannot defer¹ the
day. 40

S. Shift. And't shall please your grace, herein try
Mustantius what he will say.

K. Alex. How say you, Mustantius? are you content
the day to defer?

Must. Your grace will not will² me, I trust, for then
from law you err;

And having not her champion here according to decree,
There resteth naught for her to lose, the crown belongs
to me.

S. Shift. Nay, and't shall please your grace, rather
than she shall it lose,

I myself will be her champion for half a dozen blows.

¹ "The 4to 'referre : ' but see *ante* and *post*."—*Dyce*.

² Command.

*K. Alex.*¹ Wilt thou? then by full congé² to the challenger there stands.

S. Shift. Nay, soft! Of sufferance cometh ease; though I cannot rule my tongue I'll rule my hands.

Must. Well, noble Alexander, sith that she wants her champion as you see, 50
By greement of your royal grace the crown belongs to me.

K. Alex. Nay, Mustantius, she shall have law: wherefore to sound begin,
To see if that in three hours' space no champion will come in.— [*Sound here once.*
Of truth, madam, I sorry am none will thy cause maintain.—

Well according to the law of arms, yet, trumpet, sound again.— [*Sound second time.*

*Enter*³ *behind, CLYOMON as to combat, and NERONIS disguised as a page.*

What, and is there none will take in hand to combat for the queen?

S. Shift. Faith, I think it must be I must do the deed, for none yet is seen.

¹ So P. A. Daniel.—Old ed. "*Mustan.*"

² "*i.e.* leave, permission.—The 4to 'congo.'"—*Dyce.*

³ I follow *Dyce* in inserting this stage-direction. Old ed. marks *Clyomon's* entrance ("*Enter Clyomon, as to combat*") after l. 91; but *Clyomon* says "I enter'd with the blast."

Queen of the S. M. O king, let pity plead for me here
 in your gracious sight,
 And for so slender cause as this deprive me not of right !
 Consider once I had to spouse a prince of worthy fame,
 Though now blind Fortune spurn at me, her spite I
 needs must blame ; 61
 And though I am bereft, O king, both of my child and
 mate,
 Your grace some greement may procure : consider of my
 state,
 And suffer not a widow-queen with wrong oppressèd so,
 But pity the young infant's case wherewith, O king, I go,
 And, though I suffer wrong, let that find favour in your
 sight.

K. Alex. Why, lady, I respect you both, and sure
 would, if I might,
 Entreat Mustantius thereunto some such good order
 frame,
 Your strife should cease, and yet each one well pleasèd
 with the same.

Queen of the S. M. I know your grace may him per-
 suade, as reason wills no less. 70

K. Alex. Well, Sir Mustantius, then your mind to me
 in brief express ;
 Will you unto such order stand here limited by me,
 Without deferring longer time? say on, if you agree.

Must. In hope your grace my state will weigh, I give
 my glad consent.

K. Alex. And for to end all discord, say, madam, are
 you content?

Queen of the S. M. Yea, noble king.

K. Alex. Well, then, before my nobles all, give ear
unto the thing,¹

For swaying of the sword and mace all discord to beat
down :

The child, when it is born, we [do] elect to wear the crown ;
And till that time, Mustantius, you of lands and living

here So

Like equal part in every point with this the queen shall
share,

But to the child, when it is born, if gods grant it to live,
The kingdom whole in every part as title we do give.

But yet, Mustantius, we will yield this recompense to
you,

You shall receive five thousand crowns for yearly
pension due,

To maintain your estate while you here live and do
remain ;

And after let the whole belong unto the crown again.

Now say your minds if you agree.

*S. Shift.*² [*aside.*] I would the like choice [were put
to me !

*Queen of the S. M.*³ I, for my part, O noble king,
therewith am well content. 90

Must. Well, better half than naught at all : I likewise
give consent.

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. " King."

² Old ed. " Page."—Dyce gives the line to Neronis, but it is inappropriate in her mouth.

So Dyce.—Old ed. gives this and the next line to "*Must.*"

Clyo. [*coming forward*]. Renownèd king and most of
fame, before thy royal grace,
The queen to aid, I do present my person here in
place.

Must. You come too late, in faith, sir knight; the
hour and time is past.

Clyo. Your hour I am not to respect; I enter'd with
the blast.

Clam. What, princox,¹ is it you are come to combat
for the queen?
Good fortune now! I hope ere long your courage shall
be seen.

Clyo. And sure I count my hap as good to meet with
you, sir knight:
Come, according to your promise made, prepare yourself
to fight.

Clam. I knew you well enough, sir, although your
shield were hid from me. 100

Clyo. Now you shall feel me as well as know me, if
hand and heart agree.

K. Alex. Stay, stay, sir knights, I charge you not in
combat to proceed,
For why² the quarrel ended is and the parties are
agreed;
And therefore we discharge you both, the combat to
refrain.

Nero. [*aside*]. The heavens therefore, O noble king,
thy happy shield remain!

¹ Pert fellow.

² "For why"—because.

Clam. O king, although we be discharged for this
contention now,

Betwixt us twain there resteth yet a combat made by vow,
Which should be fought before your grace ; and since
we here be met,

To judge 'twixt us for victory let me your grace entreat.

K. Alex. For what occasion is your strife,¹ sir
knights, first let me know. 110

Clam. The truth thereof, renownèd king, thy servant
he shall show.

What time, O king, as I should take of Suavia King my
sire

The noble order² of a knight, which long I did desire,
This knight a stranger comes to court, and at that pre-
sent day

In cowardly wise he comes by stealth, and takes from
me away

The honour that I should have had ; for which my
father he

Did of his blessing give in charge, O noble king, to me
That I should know his name that thus bereaved me of
my right,

The which he will not show unless he be subdued in
fight ;

Whereto we either plighted faith that I should know his
name, 120

If that before thy grace, O king, my force in fight could
frame

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. "strifes."

² So Dyce.—Old ed. "orders."

To vanquish him: now having met thus happily together,

Though they are greed, our combat rest[s], decreed ere we came hither.

[*K. Alex.*] Are you that knight that did subdue Sir Samuel in field,

For which you had in recompense of us that golden shield?

Clyo. I am that knight, renownèd prince, whose name is yet unknown,

And since I foil'd Sir Samuel, some prowess I have shown.

Queen of the S. M. Then, as I guess, you are that knight, by that same shield you bear,

Which sometime was restored to health, within our palace here,

By Neronis our daughter, she betray'd by Norway King.

Clyo. I am that knight, indeed, O queen, whom she to health did bring;

131

Whose servant ever I am bound wheresoever that she be,

Whose enemy, O queen, is slain, pursuing her, by me.

Queen of the S. M. Know you not where she abides? sir knight, to us declare.

Clyo. No, certis; would to gods I did! she should not live in care;

But escaped from the Norway King I am assured she is.

Queen of the S. M. Well, her absence was her father's death, which turn'd to bale my bliss.

Clyo. And till I find her out again, my toil no end shall have.

*Nero.*¹ [*aside*]. Alas, he's nigh enough to her! small toil the space doth crave.

K. Alex. Well, sir knights, since that you have declared before me here 140

The cause of this the grudge which you [do] to each other bear,

I wish you both a while to pause and to my words attend:

If reason rest with you, be sure, knights, this quarrel² I will end

Without the shedding any blood betwixt you here in fight.

Clamydes, weigh you are nobly born, and will you, then, sir knight,

Go hazard life so desperately? I charge you both refrain,

Since for so small a cause the strife doth grow betwixt you twain:

And let him know your name, sir knight, and so your malice end.

Clyo. I have vow'd to the contrary, which vow I must defend.

K. Alex. Well, though so it be that you have vow'd your name shall not be known, 150

¹ So Dyc.—Old ed. "Queene."

² To be pronounced as a monosyllable (quar'l).

Yet, not detracting¹ this your vow, your country may be
shown,

And of what stock by birth you be.

S. Shift. [*aside*]. By'r lady, he is dash'd now, I see.

Clyo. [*aside*]. Indeed, this hath aston'd² me much: I
cannot but confess

My country, and my birth, my state; which plainly will
express

My name, for that unto them all my state is not [un]
known.

K. Alex. Sir knight,³

Of our demand from you again what answer shall
be shown?

Clyo. Of Denmark, noble prince, I am, and son unto
the king.

K. Alex. Why, then Sir Clyomon hight your name, as
rare report doth ring? 160

Clyo. It doth indeed so hight my name, O prince of
high renown,

I am the Prince of Denmark's son, and heir unto the crown.

Clam. And are you son to Denmark King? then do
embrace your friend,

Within whose heart here towards you all malice makes
an end,

Who with your sister linkèd is in love with loyal heart.

Clyo. And, for her sake and for thine own, like
friendship I impart.

¹ Withdrawing.

² Astonished, confounded.

³ "Sir knight,"—printed as part of the following line in old ed.

K. Alex. Well, sir knights, since friendship rests where
 rancour did remain,
 And that you are such friends become, I certain am
 right fain
 In hope you will continue still: you shall to court
 repair,
 And [to] remain, if that you please, a while to rest you
 there,
 Till time you have decreed which way your journey you
 will frame. 171

Clyo. } We yield you thanks, beseeching Jove still
Clam. } to augment your fame.

[*Exeunt* [all except CLAMYDES, CLYOMON, and
 NERONIS.]

Clam. Well, come, my Clyomon, let us pass, and, as
 we journ¹ by way,
 My most misfortunes unto thee I wholly will bewray,
 What happen'd in my last affairs and for thy sister's sake.
Clyo. Well, then, Cœur-d'acier, come and wait, your
 journey you shall take;
 And, seeing thou art prepared and hast all things in
 readiness,
 Hast thee before to Denmark [court] with [utmost]
 speediness,
 And tell the king and the queen that Clyomon their son
 In health and happy state to their court doth return. 180
*Clam.*² But in no wise to Juliana say anything of me.

¹ Journey.

² Old ed. and Dyce print this line as part of Clyomon's speech; but it plainly belongs to Clamydes.

Nero. I will not show one word amiss contrary your decree.

Clam. Well, then,¹

My Clyomon, to take our leave, to court let us repair.

Clyo. As your friend and companion, Clamydes, everywhere.

[*Exeunt* CLAMYDES and CLYOMON.]

Nero. O heavens, is this my loving knight whom I have served so long?

Now have I tried his faithful heart: O, so my joys do throng

To think how Fortune favoureth me! Neronis, now be glad,

And praise the gods thy journey now such good success hath had.

To Denmark will I haste with joy, my message to declare,

And tell the king how that his son doth homeward now repair;

And more to make my joys abound, Fortune could never frame

A finer mean to serve my turn than this, for by the same I may unto the queen declare my state in secret wise, As by the way I will recount how best I can devise.

Now pack, Neronis, like a page; haste hence lest thou be spied,

And tell thy master's message there: the gods my journey guide!

[*Exit.*]

¹ "Well then . . . repair"—one line in old ed.

Enter KING OF DENMARK, *the* QUEEN, JULIANA, *two*
Lords.

King of D. Come, lady queen ; and daughter eke, my
Juliana dear,
We muse that of your knight as yet no news again you
hear,
Which did adventure for your love the serpent to
subdue. 200

Juli. O father,¹ the sending of that worthy knight my
woful heart doth rue,
For that, alas, the furious force of his outrageous
might,
As I have heard, subdued hath full many a worthy
knight !
And this last night, O father, past, my mind was
troubled sore ;
Methought in dream I saw a knight, not known to me
before,
Which did present to me the head of that same monster
slain ;
But my Clamydes still in voice methought I heard
complain
As one bereft of all his joy : now what this dream doth
signify,
My simple skill will not suffice the truth thereof to
specify ; 209

¹ Dyce prints "O father" as a separate line. I have been sorely puzzled to know how to treat such extra-metrical words. The reader must choose for himself. I have followed the old edition.

But sore I fear to contraries th' expect thereof will hap,
Which will in huge calamities my woful corps bewrap
For sending of so worthy a prince, as was Clamydes he,
To sup his dire destruction there for wretched love of me.

Queen of D. Tush, daughter, these but fancies be,
which run within your mind.

King of D. Let them for to suppress your joys no
place of harbour find.

First Lord. O princess, let no dolours daunt: behold
your knight in place.

Juli. Ah happy sight! do I behold my knight
Clamydes' face?

Enter BRYAN SANS-FOY with the head on his sword.

B. Sans-foy. Well, I have at last through travel long
achived my journey's end:
Though Bryan, yet Clamydes' name I stoutly must
defend.—

Ah happy sight! the king and queen with daughter in
like case

220

I do behold: to them I will present myself in place.—
The mighty gods, renownèd king, thy princely state
maintain!

King of D. Sir Clamydes, most welcome sure you are
to court again.

B. Sans-foy. O princess, lo, my promise here per-
formèd thou mayst see;
The serpent's head by me subdued I do present to thee
Before thy father's royal grace.

Juli. My Clamydes, do embrace

Thy Juliana, whose heart thou hast till vital race be
run,

Sith for her sake so venturously this deed by thee was
done :

Ah, welcome home, my faithful knight! 230

B. Sans-foy. Gramercies, noble lady bright.

King of D. Well, Juliana, in our court your lover
cause to stay :

For all our nobles we will send against your nuptial day.
Go carry him to take his rest.

Juli. I shall obey your grace's hest.—

Come, my Clamydes, go with me in court your rest to
take.

B. Sans-foy. I thank you, lady; now I see account
of me you make.

[*Exeunt* [JULIANA and BRYAN SANS-FOY.]

King of D. Well, my queen, sith daughter ours hath
chosen such a make,¹

The terror of whose valiant heart may cause our foes to
quake, 239

Come, let us presently depart, and, as we did decree,
For all our nobles will we send, their nuptials for to see.

Queen of D. As pleaseth thee, thy lady queen, O king,
is well agreed.

First Lord. May it please your graces to arrest,² for,
lo, with posting speed

A messenger doth enter place.

King of D. Then will we stay to know the case.

¹ Mate.

² Stop.

Enter NERONIS [disguised as a page].

Nero. The mighty powers, renownèd prince, preserve
your state for aye!

King of D. Messenger, thou art welcome: what hast
thou to say?

Nero. Sir Clyomon, your noble son, Knight of the
Golden Shield,

Who for his valiant victories in town and eke in field
Is famèd through the world, to your court doth now
return,

And hath sent me before to court, your grace for to
inform. 250

King of D. Ah messenger, declare, is¹ this of truth
the which that thou hast told?

Nero. It is most true, O noble king, you may thereof
be bold.

King of D. Ah joy of joys, surpassing all! what joy
is this to me,

My Clyomon in court to have, the nuptial for to see
Of Juliana sister his! O, so I joy in mind!

Queen of D. My boy, where is thy master, speak;
what, is he far behind?

Declare with speed, for these my eyes do long his face
to view.

Nero. O queen, this day he will be here, 'tis truth I
tell to you:

¹ "Is this the truth that thou," &c., or "is this of truth the which
thou'st told," would be more metrical.

But, noble queen, let pardon here my bold attempt
excuse, 260

And for to hear a simple boy in secret not refuse,
Who hath strange tidings from your son to tell unto
your grace. [Exit [with the QUEEN OF D.]

First Lord. Behold, my lord, where, as I guess, some
strangers enter place.

King of D. I hope my Clyomon be not far.—O joy, I
see his face!

[Enter CLYOMON, CLAMYDES, and SUTLE SHIFT.]

Clyo. Come, Knowledge, come forward; why art thou
always slack?

Get you to court, brush up our apparel, untruss your
pack:

Go seek out my page, bid him come to me with all
speed you can.

S. Shift. Go seek out, fetch, bring here! Gog's ounds¹
what am I, a dog or a man?

I were better be a hangman and live² so like a drudge:
Since your new man came to you, I must pack, I must
trudge. 270

Clyo. How, stands thou, knave? why gets thou not
away?

S. Shift. Now, now, sir, you are so hasty now, I know
not what to say. [Exit.]

¹ "Gog's ounds"—God's wounds.

² "And live"—if I live.

Clyo. O noble prince, the gods above preserve thy royal grace!

King of D. How joyful is my heart, dear son, to view again thy face!

Clyo. And I as joyful in the view of parents' happy plight,

Whom sacred gods long time maintain in honour day and night!

But this my friend, O father dear, even as myself entreat,¹

Whose nobleness, when time shall serve, to you he shall repeat.

King of D. If case my son he be thy friend, with heart I thee embrace.

*Clam.*² With loyal heart in humble wise I thank your noble grace. 280

King of D. My Clyomon, declare, my son, in thine adventures late

What hath been wrought by Fortune most t' advance thy noble state.

Clyo. O father, the greatest joy of all the joys which was to me³ assign'd,

Since first I left your noble court, by cruel Fortune blind,

Is now bereft from me away through her accursèd fate,

So that I rather find she doth envy my noble state

¹ Treat.

² So Dyce.—Old ed. "Clyomon."

³ So Dyce.—Old ed. "one."

Than seek for to advance the same; so that I boldly
 may

Express she never gave so much but more she took away;
 And that which I have lost by her and her accursèd ire,
 From travail will I never cease until I may aspire 290
 Unto the view thereof, O king, wherein is all my joy.

King of D. Why, how hath Fortune wrought to thee
 this care and great annoy?

Clyo. O father, unto me the heavenly powers assign'd
 a noble dame,
 With whom to live in happy life my heart did wholly
 frame;
 But not long did that glazing¹ star give light unto mine
 eyes
 But this fell Fortune gins to frown, which every state
 despise,
 And takes away through canker'd hate that happy light
 from me,
 In which I fixèd had my hope a blessèd state to see:
 And daughter to the King she was which of Strange
 Marshes hight,
 Bearing bruit each where to be Dame Beauty's darling
 bright, 300

¹ I cannot recall this word in the sense of "shining," but hesitate to adopt Dr. Nicholson's correction "blazing."—"I can't afford to give up this word; I want it in support of the reading of the folios in *Julius Caesar*, I. iii. 20, 21:—

' Against the Capitoll I met a Lyon
 Who glaz'd upon me, and went surly by.'

Besides have we not, in *Euphues*, "Glaze-worm" = glow-worm (quoted in *Nares*)?—*P. A. Daniel*.

Right heir unto Dame Virtue's grace, Dame Nature's
pattern true,

Dame Prudence' scholar for her wit, Dame Venus for
her hue,

Diana for her dainty life, Susanna being sad,¹

Sage Saba for her soberness, mild Martha² being glad ;

And if I should re-entry make amongst the Muses
Nine,

My lady lack'd no kind of art which man may well
define

Amongst those dainty dames to be : then let all judge
that hear,

If that my cause it be not just for which this pensive
cheer

Fell Fortune forceth me to make.

King of D. Yet, Clyomon, good counsel take ; 310

Let not the loss of lady thine³ so pinch thy heart with
grief

That nothing may unto thy mind give comfort or relief :

What, man ! there ladies are enow, although that she
be gone ;

Then leave to wail the want of her, cease off to make
this moan.

Clyo. No, father, ne'er seem⁴ to persuade, for, as is
said before,

¹ Serious.

² Old ed. "Marpha."—Dyce suggested the correction.

³ So Dyce.—Old ed. "of the Lady thine."

⁴ Old ed. "neuer seem for to."—The words "seem to persuade" appear to have here the meaning—think to persuade, attempt to persuade.

What travail I have had for her it shall be triple more
Until I meet with her again.

Clam. Well, Clyomon, a while refrain,
And let me here my woes recount before your father's
grace ;

But let me crave your sister may be sent for into place.—
O king, vouchsafe I may demand [your grace] a simple
bound ;¹ 32^r

Although a stranger, yet I hope such favour may be
found :

The thing is this, that you will send for Juliana hither,
Your daughter fair, that we may talk a word or twain
together.

King of D. For what, [pray] let me know, sir knight,
do you her sight desire.

Clyo. The cause pretends² no harm, my liege, why
he doth this require.

King of D. My lord, go bid our daughter come and
speak with me straightway.

First Lord. I shall, my liege, in every point your
mind herein obey. [Exit.

Clyo. O father, this is Clamydes and son to Suavia
King,

Who for my sister ventured life the serpent's head to bring,
With whom I met in travel mine ; but more what did
befall 33^r

To work his woe, whenas she comes, your grace shall
know it all.

¹ " *i.e.* boon,—for the rhyme."—*Dyce.*

² Intends.

King of D. My son, you are deceivèd much, I you assure, in this ;

The person whom you term him for in court already is.

*Clyo.*¹ No, father, I am not deceived ; this is Clamydes sure.

King of D. Well, my son, do cease a while such talk to put in ure,²

For, lo, thy sister entereth place, which soon the doubt shall end.

Clam. Then for to show my name to her I surely do pretend.³

[*Re-*]enter JULIANA [*and* First Lord ; *and, after them,*
SUBTLE SHIFT].

My Juliana, noble dame, Clamydes do embrace,
Who many a bitter brunt hath bode since that he saw
thy face. 340

Juli. Avaunt, dissembling wretch ! what credit canst
thou yield ?

Where's the serpent's head thou brought, where is my
glittering shield ?

Tush, tush, sir knight, you counterfeit ; you would
Clamydes be,

But want of these bewrays you quite and shows you
are not he.

Clam. O princess, do not me disdain ! I certain am
your knight.

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. "Clamy."

² "Put in ure"—make use of.

³ Intend.

Juli. What, art thou frantic, foolish man? avaunt
from out my sight!

If thou art he, then show my shield and bring the
serpent's head.

Clam. O princess, hear me show my case by Fortune
fell decreed!

I am your knight, and when I had subdued the monster fell
Through weary fight and travail great, as Knowledge
here can tell, 350

I laid me down to rest a space within the forest, where
One Bryan than,¹ who² Sans-foy hight, with cowardly
usage there

By chanting charm brought me asleep; then did he
take from me

The serpent's head, my coat, and shield the which you
gave to me,

And left me in his prison, lo, still sleeping as I was:³

Lo, lady, thus I lost those things the which to me you
gave;

But certainly I am your knight, and he who did deprave⁴
The flying serpent of his life, according as you will'd,
That whoso won your love, by him the same should
be fulfill'd.

Juli. Alas, poor knight, how simply have you framèd
this excuse! 360

The name of such a noble knight t' usurp and eke abuse.

¹ Old form of "then."

² "Who Sans-foy hight"—Dyce's correction. Old ed. "Sancefoy
hight, who."

³ A line to rhyme with this has dropped out.

⁴ Deprive.

Clyo. No, sister, [no,] you are deceived; this is Clamydes sure.

Juli. No, brother, then you are deceived, such tales to put in ure;¹

For my Clamydes is in court, who did present to me,
In white attire, the serpent's head and shield as yet to see.

Clam. That shall I quickly understand.—O king, permit I may

Have conference a while with him, whom,² as your grace doth say,

Presents³ Clamydes for to be before your royal grace.

Juli. Behold,⁴ no whit aghast to show himself, where he doth enter place.

[*Re-enter* BRYAN SANS-FOY.]

Clam. Ah traitor, art thou he that doth my name and state abuse? 370

Juli. Sir knight, you are too bold, in presence here such talk against him for to use.

B. Sans-foy. Wherefore dost thou upbraid me thus? thou varlet, do declare.

Clyo. No varlet he; to call him so, sir knight, to blame you are.⁵

¹ See note 2, p. 218.

² Attracted into the case of the preceding word.—A piece of slovenly carelessness, not a misprint.

³ *i.e.* represents himself to be Clamydes. ("Qy. 'pretends'?"—*Dyce.*)

⁴ This and the next verse spoken by Juliana are very cumbersome. "Behold" and "Sir knight" may be ranged as separate lines, if the reader chooses.

⁵ "To blame you are"—Collier's correction. Old ed. "you are too blame."

Clam. Wouldst thou perstand¹ for what intent such talk I here do frame?

Because I know thou dost usurp my state and noble name.

B. Sans-foy. Who art thou, [say,] or what's thy name? re-answer quickly make.

Clam. I am Clamydes, whose name to bear thou here dost undertake.

B. Sans-foy. Art thou Clamydes? 'vaunt, thou false usurper of my state!

Avoid this place, or death shall be thy most accursèd fate;

How darest thou enterprise to take my name thus unto thee? 380

Clam. Nay, rather, how darest thou attempt t' usurp the name of me?

Juli. You lie, sir knight, he doth not so; 'gainst him you have it done.

Clyo. Sister,² you are deceived,
My friend here is Clamydes Prince, the King of Suavia's son.

Juli. Nay, brother, neither you nor he can me deceive herein.³

Clam. O king, bow down thy princely ears, and listen what I say:

To prove myself the wight I am before your royal grace,

¹ Understand.

² "Sister . . . son"—printed as one line in old ed.—Here it would be intolerable to follow the old copy.

³ "Herein" is no rhyme to "I say." Some lines may have dropped out.

And to disprove this faithless knight, which here I find
in place

For to usurp my name so much, the combat will I try ;
For before I will mine honour lose, I rather choose to
die.

390

King of D. I like well your determined mind.—But
how say you, sir knight ?

S. Shift. Nay, by his ounds,¹ I'll gage my gown he
dares not fight.

B. Sans-foy [*aside*]. By Gog's blood, I shall be slain
now if the combat I deny,

And not for the ears of my head with him I dare try.

King of D. Sir knight, why do you not re-answer make
in trial of your name ?

B. Sans-foy. I will, O king, if case he dare in combat
try the same.

King of D. Well, then, go to prepare yourselves, each
one his weapons take.

Juli. Good father, let it not be so ; restrain them for
my sake.

I may not here behold my knight in danger for to be
With such a one who doth usurp his name to purchase
me :

400

I speak not this for that I fear his force or strength in
fight,

But that I will not have him deal with such a desperate
wight.

¹ "His ounds"—God's wounds. (Old ed. gives this as well as the two following lines to "Bryan."—Dyce made the correction.)

King of D. Nay, sure there is no better way than that
which is decreed ;

And therefore for to end their strife the combat shall
proceed.—

Sir knights, prepare yourselves the truth thereof to try.

Clam. I ready am, no cowardly heart shall cause
me to deny.

B. Sans-foy [*aside*]. Nay, I'll never stand the trial of
it, my heart to fight doth faint ;

Therefore I'll take me to my legs, seeing my honour I
must attain. [*Runs.*]

King of D. Why, whither runs Clamydes? Sir knight,
seem¹ to stay him. 409

Clyo. Nay, it is Clamydes, O king, that doth fray him.

Clam. Nay, come, sir, come, for the combat we will try.

B. Sans-foy. Ah, no, my heart is done!² to be Cla-
mydes I deny.

King of D. Why, how now, Clamydes! how chance
you do the combat here thus shun?

B. Sans-foy. O king, grant pardon unto me! the thing
I have begun

I must deny; for I am not Clamydes, this is plain,

'Though greatly to my shame I must my words revoke
again ;

I am no other than the knight whom they Sans-foy [do] call:

'This is Clamydes, the fear of whom my daunted mind
doth 'pall.

¹ An awkward word, but not (I believe) corrupt. Cf. l. 315.

² "Qy. 'gone'?"—*Dyce.* ("Qy. 'down'?"—*P. A. Daniel.*)

Juli. Is this Clamydes? Ah worthy knight, then do
forgive thy dear!

And welcome eke ten thousand times unto thy lady
here!

Clam. Ah my Juliana bright, what's past I do forgive,
For well I see thou constant art; and, whilst that I do
live,

For this my firmèd faith in thee for ever I'll repose.

Juli. O father, now I do deny¹ that wretch, and do
amongst my foes
Recount him for this treason wrought.²

King of D. Well, Knowledge, take him unto thee;
and for the small regard
The which he had to valiant knights, this shall be his
reward:

Sith he by charms his cruelty in cowardly manner wrought
On knights, who, as Clamydes did, the crown of honour
sought,

And traitorously did them betray in prison for to keep,
The fruits of such-like cruelty himself by us shall reap
By due desert: therefore I charge to prison him convey,
There for to lie perpetually unto his dying day.

B. Sans-foy. O king, be merciful and show some
favour in this case!

King of D. Nay, never think that at my hands thou
shalt find any grace.

[*Exit* BRYAN SANS-FOY *with* SUBTLE SHIFT.]

¹ Refuse.

² Corrupt,—or left imperfect by the author.

Clamydes, ah, most welcome thou our daughter to enjoy!
The heavens be praised that this have wrought to foil all
future noy!¹

Clam. I thank your grace that you thus so well esteem
of me.²

Re-enter SUBTLE SHIFT.

S. Shift. What, is all things finish'd and every man
eased?

Is the pageant pack'd up and all parties pleased? 440
Hath each lord his lady and each lady her love?

Clyo. Why, Knowledge, what mean'st thou those
motions to move?³

S. Shift. You were best wait a while and then you
shall know,

For the queen herself comes the motion to show.

You sent me, if you remember, to seek out your page,
But I cannot find him; I went whistling and calling
through the court in such a rage!

At the last very sca[r]cely in at a chamber I did pry,
Where the queen with other ladies very busy I did spy
Decking up a strange lady very gallant and gay, 450
To bring her here in presence, as in court I heard say.

Clyo. A strange lady, Knowledge! of whence is she
canst thou tell me?

S. Shift. Not I, and't shall please you, but anon you
shall see,

¹ Hurt.

² The line (if line there was) to rhyme with this has dropped out.

³ *i.e.* those questions to ask.

For, lo, where the lady with your mother doth
come. §

Clyo. Then straightway my duty to her grace shall
be done.

*Re-enter*¹ the QUEEN OF DENMARK with NERONIS in
female attire.

The] mighty gods preserve your state, O queen and
mother dear,

Hoping your blessing I have had, though absent many
a year!

Queen of D. My Clyomon! thy sight, my son, doth
make thy aged mother glad,

Whose absence long and many a year hath made thy
pensive parents sad;

And more to let thee know, my son, that I do love and
tender thee, 460

I have here for thy welcome home a present which I'll
render² thee;

This lady, though she be unknown, refuse her not, for
sure her state

Deserves a prince's son to wed, and therefore take her
for thy mate.

Clyo. O noble queen and mother dear, I thank you
for your great good-will,

But I am otherwise bestow'd, and sure I must my oath
fulfil:

¹ Old ed. has simply "*Enter Queene.*"

² So Dyce.—Old ed. "giue to."

And so I mind, if gods tofore;¹ on such decree I mean
to pause:

For sure I must of force deny;² my noble father knows
the cause.

King of D. Indeed, my queen, this much he told, he
loved a lady since he went,

Who hath his heart and ever shall, and none but her to
love he's bent.

Clyo. So did I say, and so I will; no beauty's blaze,
no glistering wight,

Can cause me to forget her love to whom my faith I
first did plight. 470

Nero. Why, are you so strait-laced, sir knight, to cast
a lady off so coy?

Turn once again and look on me; perhaps my sight
may bring you joy.

Clyo. Bring joy to me! alas, which way? no lady's
looks can make me glad.

Nero. Then were my recompense but small to quit
my pain for you I had:

Wherefore, sir knight, do weigh my words, set not so
light the love I show,

But when you have bethought yourself, you will recant
and turn, I know.

Queen of D. My Clyomon, refuse her not; she is and
must thy lady be.

¹ "If gods tofore"—under gods' guidance. The words "on such decree I mean to pause" appear to mean—by this decision of mine I intend to stand.

² *i.e.*, refuse your request.

Clyo. If otherwise my mind be bent, I trust your grace will pardon me.

Nero. Well, then, I see 'tis time to speak : sir knight, let me one question crave. 480

*Clyo.*¹ Say on your mind.

Nero. Where is that lady now become, to whom your plighted faith you gave ?

Clyo. Nay, if I could absolve that doubt, then were my mind at ease.

Nero. Were you not brought to health by her, when you came sick once off the seas ?

Clyo. Yea, sure, I must confess a truth, she did restore my health to me,
For which good deed I rest her own in hope one day her face to see.

Nero. But did you not promise her to return to see her at a certain day,
And, ere you came that to perform, the Norway King stole her away,
And so your lady there you lost ?

Clyo. All this I grant, but to his cost, 490
For, stealing her against her will, this hand of mine bereft his life.

Nero. Now, sure, sir knight, you served him well, to teach him know another man's wife :
But yet once more, sir knight, reply, the truth I crave to understand,

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. prints this speech (in italics) as part of the following line.

In forest once who gave you drink whereas you stood
with sword in hand,

Fearing lest some had you pursued for slaying of your
enemy?

Clyo. That did a silly shepherd's boy, which there I
took my page to be.

Nero. And what is of that page become? remains he
with you, yea or no?

Clyo. I sent him hither ere I came, because the king
and queen should know

That I in health returnèd was; but since I never saw
him.

Nero. And, sure, he stands not far from hence, though
now you do not know him. 500

Clyo. Not far from hence! where might he be?

Nero. Of troth, sir knight, myself am he :

I brought your message to the king, as here the queen
can testify,

I gave you drink in forest sure when you with drought
were like to die,

I found you once upon the shore full sick whenas you
came from seas,

I brought you home to father's court, I sought all means
your mind to please,

And I it was that all this while have waited like a page
on thee,

Still hoping for to spy a time wherein I might discover
me ;

And so by hap at last I did, I thank your mother's noble
grace,

She entertain'd me courteously when I had told her all
my case ; 510

And now let this suffice, my dear, I am Neronis whom
you see,

Who many a weary step hath gone before and since I
met with thee.

Clyo. O sudden joys ! O heavenly sight ! O words
more worth than gold !

Neronis, O my dear, welcome ! my arms I here un-
fold

To clasp thy comely 'corps withal : twice-welcome to thy
knight !

Nero. And I as joyful am, no doubt, my Clyomon, of
thy happy sight.

Clyo. Clamydes, my assurèd friend, lo, how Dame
Fortune favoureth me !

This is Neronis my dear love, whose face so long I wish'd
to see.

Clam. My Clyomon, I am as glad as you yourself to
see this day.

King of D. Well, daughter, though a stranger yet,
welcome to court, as I may say. 520

Queen of D. And, lady, as welcome unto me as if
thou wert mine only child.

Nero. For this your gracious courtesy I thank you
noble princess mild.

Juli. Though strange and unacquainted yet, do make
account you welcome are :

Your nuptial day as well as mine I know my father will
prepare.

King of D. Yes, we are prest¹ your nuptial day with
daughter ours to see,
As well as Clyomon's our son with this his lady fair ;
Come, therefore, to our court, that we the same may soon
prepare,
For we are prest throughout our land for all our peers to
send.

All. Thy pleasure, most renownèd king, thy servants
shall attend. [*Excunt omnes.*

¹ Ready, eager. (A line to rhyme with this line is wanting.)

A FAREWELL

TO

SIR JOHN NORRIS AND SIR
FRANCIS DRAKE, ETC.

AND

A TALE OF TROY.

THE
TALE OF
Troy:

By G. PEELE
*M. of Arts in
Oxford.*

Printed by A. H.
1604.

A^d Farewell. Entituled to the famous and fortunate Generalls of our English forces: Sir Iohn Norris & Syr Frauncis Drake Knights, and all theyr braue and resolute followers. Whereunto is annexed: A tale of Troy. Ad Lectorem. Parue nec inuidio [sic] sine me (liber) ibis ad arma, Hei mihi, quod domino non licet ire tuo. Doone by George Peele, Maister of Artes in Oxforde. At London Printed by I. C. and are to bee solde by William Wright, at his shop adioyning to S. Mildreds Church in the Poultrie. Anno. 1589. 4to.

On the back of the title, as in *The Honour of the Garter*, are the arms of Elizabeth, with the motto "*Semper eadem*," and under them these verses :

*" Gallia victa dedit flores, inuicta Leones
Anglia: ius belli in flore, leone suum:
O sic O semper ferat Elizabetha triumphos,
Incluta Gallorum flore leone suo."*

On 18th April 1589 a fleet of 180 vessels, with 21,000 men, set sail from Plymouth for Portugal under the command of Drake and Norris. The ostensible object of the expedition, which proved very disastrous, was to seat the needy refugee "king" Don Antonio (who spent some years in England, snubbed by Queen Elizabeth, who posed as his patroness, and shunned by the courtiers) on the throne of Portugal.

In 1604 appeared the second edition of *The Tale of Troy: By G. Peele M. of Arts in Oxford. Printed by A. H. 1604*: the imprint at the end being *London Printed by Arnold Halfield, dwelling in Eliots Court in the Little old Baylie: And are to be sold by Nicholas Ling.* It is a tiny volume, about an inch and a half high. A facsimile of the title, from a copy (unique?) in private hands, is given on the opposite page.

TO THE MOST FAMOUS GENERALS OF OUR
ENGLISH FORCES BY LAND AND SEA,
SIR JOHN NORRIS AND SIR FRANCIS
DRAKE, KNIGHTS.

YOUR virtues famed by your fortunes, and fortunes renowned by your virtues, thrice-honourable generals, together with the admiration the world hath worthily conceived of your worthiness, have at this time encouraged me, a man not unknown to many of your brave and forward followers, captains, and soldiers, to send my short *Farewell* to our English forces. Whereunto I have annexed an old poem of mine own, *The Tale of Troy*, a pleasant discourse, fitly serving to recreate by the reading the chivalry of England; to whom, as to your ingenious judgments, I dedicate the same; that good minds, inflamed with honourable reports of their ancestry, may imitate their glory in highest adventures, and my countrymen, famed through the world for resolution and fortitude, may march in equipage of honour and arms with their glorious and renowned predecessors, the Trojans.

Beseeching God mercifully and miraculously, as hitherto he hath done, to defend fair England, that her soldiers may in their departure be fortunate and in their return triumphant,

GEO. PEELE.

A FAREWELL

ENTITULED

TO THE FAMOUS AND FORTUNATE
GENERALS OF OUR ENGLISH
FORCES, ETC.

—o—

HAVE done with care, my hearts ! aboard amain,
With stretching sails to plough the swelling waves :
Bid England's shore and Albion's chalky cliffs
Farewell ; bid stately Troynovant adieu,
Where pleasant Thames from Isis' silver head
Begins her quiet glide, and runs along
To that brave bridge, the bar that thwarts her course,
Near neighbour to the ancient stony Tower,
The glorious hold that Julius Cæsar built.
Change love for arms ; girt-to your blades, my boys ! 10
Your rests¹ and muskets take, take helm and targe,
And let God Mars his consort² make you mirth,—

¹ Supports for the muskets.

² Old form of *concert*.

The roaring cannon,¹ and the brazen trump,
 The angry-sounding drum, the whistling fife,
 The shrieks of men, the princely courser's neigh.
 Now vail² your bonnets to your friends at home :
 Bid all the lovely British dames adieu,
 That under many a standard well-advanced
 Have hid³ the sweet alarms and braves of love ;
 Bid theatres and proud tragedians, 20
 Bid Mahomet's Pow,⁴ and mighty Tamburlaine,
 King Charlemagne,⁵ Tom Stukeley,⁶ and the rest,
 Adieu. To arms, to arms, to glorious arms !
 With noble Norris, and victorious Drake,
 Under the sanguine cross, brave England's badge,
 To propagate religious piety,
 And hew a passage with your conquering swords
 By land and sea, wherever Phœbus' eye,
 Th' eternal lamp of heaven, lends us light ;
 By golden Tagus, or the western Inde, 30
 Or through the spacious bay of Portugal,
 The wealthy ocean-main, the Tyrrhene sea,
 From great Alcides' pillars branching forth

¹ "Shakespeare perhaps remembered this passage when he wrote Othello's 'farewell' to war."—*Dyce*.

² Lower.

³ So *Dyce*.—Old ed. "bid."

⁴ Old ed. "Mahomets Poo."—*Dyce* adopted Mitford's emendation "Mahomet, Scipio"—unnecessarily. Mr. Fleay points out that the allusion is to the brazen head of Mahomet in Greene's *Alphonsus*.

⁵ An allusion to some lost play in which Charlemagne figures. In vol. iii. of my *Collection of Old Plays* I printed from MS. a play on the subject of Charlemagne ; but that play is of later date.

⁶ Peele may be alluding to his own *Battle of Alcazar*.

Even to the gulf that leads to lofty Rome ;
There to deface the pride of Antichrist,
And pull his paper walls and popery down,—
A famous enterprise for England's strength,
To steel your swords on Avarice' triple crown,
And cleanse Augeas' stalls in Italy.
To arms, my fellow soldiers ! Sea and land 40
Lie open to the voyage you intend :
And sea or land, bold Britons, far or near,
Whatever course your matchless virtue shapes,
Whether to Europe's bounds, or Asian plains,
To Afric's shore, or rich America,
Down to the shades of deep Avernus' crags,
Sail on, pursue your honours to your graves :
Heaven is a sacred covering for your heads,
And every climate virtue's tabernacle.
To arms, to arms, to honourable arms !¹ 50
Hoise sails, weigh anchors up, plough up the seas
With flying keels, plough up the land with swords :
In God's name venture on ; and let me say
To you, my mates, as Cæsar said to his,
Striving with Neptune's hills ; " You bear," quoth he,
Cæsar and Cæsar's fortune in your ships."

¹ " In *The Lamentable Tragedie of Locrine*, &c., first printed 1595, we find,—

' To armes, my lord, to honourable armes,'

which is followed by what forms part of the eleventh verse of the present poem,

' Take helme and targe.' Sig. F 2.—*Dyce.*

You follow them, whose swords successful are
You follow Drake, by sea the scourge of Spain,
The dreadful dragon, terror to your foes,
Victorious in his return from Inde, 60
In all his high attempts unvanquishèd ;
You follow noble Norris, whose renown,
Won in the fertile fields of Belgia,
Spreads by the gates of Europe to the courts
Of Christian kings and heathen potentates.
You fight for Christ, and England's peerless queen,
Elizabeth, the wonder of the world,
Over whose throne the enemies of God
Have thunder'd erst their vain successless braves.
O, ten-times-treble happy men, that fight 70
Under the cross of Christ and England's queen,
And follow such as Drake and Norris are !
All honours do this cause accompany ;
All glory on these endless honours waits :
These honours and this glory shall He send,
Whose honour and whose glory you defend.

Yours, G. P.

THE BEGINNING, ACCIDENTS,
AND
END OF THE FALL OF TROY.¹

—o—

IN that world's wounded part,² whose waves yet swell
With everlasting showers of tears that fell,
And bosom bleeds with great effuse of blood
That long war shed,—Troy, Neptune's city, stood,
Gorgeously built, like to the House of Fame,
Or Court of Jove, as some describe the same ;
Under a prince whom, for his happy state,
That age surnamed Priam the Fortunate,
So honoured for his royal progeny,
Blest in his queen, his offspring, and his country : 10

¹ For this heading the 1604 ed. has only "The Tale of Troy."—I have restored the marginal notes found in ed. 1589. Dyce omitted them on the insufficient ground that they were "an unnecessary incumbrance to the page."

² Ed. 1589 :

" Whilom in <i>Troy</i> , that ancient noble towne,	Troy.
Did dwell a king of honor & renowne,	
Of port, of puisaunce, and mickle fame,	
And <i>Priam</i> was this mighty princes name ;	Priam.
Whom, in regard of his triumphant state,	
The world as then surnamde the fortunate,	
So happy was he for his progenie,	
His queene, his court, his children, and countrie."	

Hecuba.

Y-clyppèd Stately Hecuba was she,
 A goodly creature¹ of such majesty
 As well became her princely personage ;
 And, long before she tasted fortune's rage,
 With twenty² sons and daughters, wondrous thing,
 This lusty lady did enrich her king,
 Fruit not unlike the tree whereof³ they sprung ;
 The daughters lovely, modest, wise,⁴ and young ;
 The sons, as doth my story well unfold,
 All knights-at-arms, gay, gallant, brave,⁵ and bold, 20
 Of wit and manhood⁶ such as might suffice
 To venter on the highest piece of service :
 His peers as loyal to their royal lord
 As might ne⁷ tainted be for deed or word ;
 His court presenting⁸ to our human eyes
 An earthly heaven or shining paradise,
 Where ladies troop'd in rich disguised⁹ attire,
 Glistening like stars of pure immortal fire.

Priam's
honours.

¹ Ed. 1589:

“ So faire a creature hardlie might you see,
 So braue, and of so comelie personage.”

² “ Ed. 1604 ‘many.’ (Both lections being, for obvious reasons, very objectionable).”—*Dyce*.

³ Ed. 1604 “from whence.”

⁴ Ed. 1604 “fair.”

⁵ Ed. 1604 “knights in arms aduenterous.”

⁶ Ed. 1604 omits this and the next line.

⁷ Not.—Ed. 1604 “not.”

⁸ Ed. 1589, omitting lines 27, 28, has—

“ His court presenting to our earthlie eyes
 A skye of starres or shyning paradise.
 Thus happy *Priam*,” &c.

⁹ “ ‘Disguised’ = variously fashioned. Cf. ‘discoloured,’ *David and Bethsabe*, sc. i. l. 36.”—*P. A. Daniel*.

Thus happy, Priam, didst thou live of yore,
 That to thy hap could naught be added more ;¹ 30
 Till 'mong the gods I wot not which² was he
 Envying tho³ this happiness to thee,
 Or goddess, or accursèd fiend below,
 Conspiring thy Troy's wrack and overthrow,—
 Alack, that happiness may not long⁴ last,
 That all our⁵ braveries been so brief a blast !—
 Till one, I say, revengeful⁶ power or other
 Buzz'd in the brain of the unhappy mother
 A dreadful dream, and, as it did befall,
 To Priam's Troy a dream deadly and fatal. 40
 For when the time of mother's pain drew nigh,
 And now the load that in her womb did lie
 Began to stir and move with⁷ proper strength,
 Ready to leave his place ; behold, at length
 She dreams, and gives her lord⁸ to understand
 That she should soon bring forth a fire-brand,⁹
 Whose flame¹⁰ and fatal smoke would grow so great
 As Ilium's towers it should consume with heat :

40

Hecuba with
 child with
 Paris.

Hecuba's
 dream.

¹ Ed. 1604 "That to thy fortune heauens could adde no more."

² Ed. 1589 "what."

³ Then.

⁴ Ed. 1604 "euer."

⁵ Ed. 1589 "these."

⁶ Ed. 1589 "avenging."

⁷ Ed. 1604 "To moue beganne and stir with."

⁸ Ed. 1604 "pheere" (*i.e.* husband).

⁹ Ed. 1604 "a firy brand." (*Fire* has the value of a dissyllable.)

¹⁰ Ed. 1589 :

"Whose hote and clymbing flame should grow so great,
 That *Neptunes Troy* it would consume with heate."

And, counsel taken of this¹ troublous dream,
 The soothsayers said² that not swift Simois' stream 50
 Nor³ Xanthus' icy waves might quench the fire
 That did this brand 'gainst Troy's proud walls conspire.
 Which to prevent (a piteous tale to tell)
 Both sire and dame 'gainst law and kind⁴ rebel ;

Paris thrown
 out of Troy.

And, that this fear might so⁵ be overblown,
 This babe from Troy withouten ruth is thrown.

But tempted may the gods, not mockèd, be :
 It is thy fate, nor mayst⁶ thou, Troy, foresee
 What must befall, thou mayst it not foreknow :
 Yet Paris lives, and men him callèd so ;

60

Paris a shep-
 herd, in Ida.

He lives a shepherd's lad⁷ on Ida hills,
 And breathes a man 'gainst Troy and Trojans' wills,
 That threatens fire to Troy, a jolly swain.

And here me list leave Priam and his train,
 And tell of⁸ Paris yet another while ;
 How he can nymphs and shepherds' trulls beguile,
 And pipen songs, and whet his wits on books,
 And rape⁹ poor maids with sweet-alluring looks :
 So couth he sing his lays among them all,
 And tune his pipe unto the water's fall,¹⁰

70

¹ Ed. 1604 "his."

² Ed. 1604 "say."

³ Ed. 1589 :

"Might serue to quench that fierce deuouring fire
 That did this brand gainst towne of Troy conspire."

⁴ Nature.

⁵ Ed. 1604 "soone."

⁶ Ed. 1589 "may."

⁷ Ed. 1589 "swayne."

⁸ Ed. 1589 "tend we."

⁹ Ed. 1589 "wrap."

¹⁰ "This line is borrowed from Spenser's *Eclogue for April*—
 'And tuned it unto the water's fall.'"—*Dyce*.

To wander by that sacred place alone
(Belike his nymph and walking-mate was gone) ;

Paris chosen
judge of
beauty.

And there was chosen judge to end the¹ strife
That after cost² full many a man his life.

And thus this doughty daysman,³ as I read,
Did crankly⁴ venture on this thankless deed :

Whom Juno first, that proud⁵ and stately goddess,

Juno's offer.

Enticed with offer⁶ of much wealth and riches ;

100

And certes gold hath store of eloquence.

Pallas' offer.

Him Pallas eke, the queen of sapience,

Tempted⁷ with wisdom and with chivalry,

To win the golden ball bequeath'd to beauty.

But neither wealth nor wisdom might him move,

Venus' offer.

When Venus gan t' encounter him with love.

So, led away with over-vain conceit,

And surfeiting belike on pleasure's bait,⁸

As men are wont to let the better go

And choose the worse, this jolly herd-groom,⁹ lo,

110

In hope to win the flower of gallant Greece,¹⁰

Fair Helena, that brave and peerless piece,

¹ Ed. 1589 "this."

² Ed. 1589 "lost."

³ Umpire.

⁴ "i.e. briskly."—*Dyce*.

⁵ Ed. 1589 "the great."

⁶ Ed. 1589 "honor."

⁷ Ed. 1604 :

"Wooded for pure wisdoms worth and chivalrie
This earthly swaine to praise her heavenly beautie.
But neither wealth nor wisdoms gifts might moue,
When *Venus* gan t' enchant his thoughts with loue."

⁸ For "belike on pleasure's bait" ed. 1604 reads "on pleasures wanton bait."

⁹ Ed. 1589 "shepherd."

¹⁰ Ed. 1589 "the gallant flower of Greece."

Giveth the prize to Lady Venus' grace,¹
 And ends with endless war this doubtful case.

Paris gives
 the ball to
 Venus.

Ah Paris ! hadst thou had but equal² eyes,
 Indifferent in bestowing of the prize,
 Thy human wits³ might have discernèd well
 Where the⁴ true beauty of the mind did dwell :
 But men must err, because that⁵ men they be,
 And men with love y-blinded cannot see.⁶

120

Throughout the world the rumour being blown
 Of this event, the man was quickly known,
 And homeward⁷ comes, forsooth, to luckless⁸ Troy,
 Of yore a shepherd's lad,⁹ King Priam's boy ;
 And in his bosom lodg'd¹⁰ an uncouth¹¹ heat,
 The strength whereof began to grow so great
 That needly Paris¹² must prepare to see
 What might the substance of the¹³ shadow be
 That yet his fancy wrought upon so fast.
 So, furnishèd with men and ships, at last

Paris returns
 to Troy from
 Ida.

130

¹ Ed. 1604 " Giueth this beauties prize to *Venus* grace."

² "*i.e.* impartial."—*Dyce.* ³ Ed. 1589 " wit."

⁴ For " Where the " ed. 1589 reads " Wherein."

⁵ Ed. 1604 " but."

⁶ " Ed. 1604 ' may not see.'—In *England's Parnassus*, 1600 (under the head '*Beauty*,' p. 18), this couplet is given thus :

' All men do err, because that men they be,
 And men with beauty blinded cannot see.'—*Dyce.*

⁷ Ed. 1589 " homewards."

⁸ Ed. 1604 " wretched."

⁹ Ed. 1589 " swayne."

¹⁰ For " bosom lodg'd " ed. 1589 reads " brest did beare."

¹¹ Strange, unaccustomed.

¹² Ed. 1589 " As needs Sir Paris.' (*Needly*=necessarily.)

¹³ Ed. 1589 " this."

Paris' expedition to Lacedæmon.

To Lacedæmon doth this minion come ;
The winds made way, the sea affording room :
In fine, the cut and voyage seeming¹ short,

Paris arrives at Menelaus' Court.

The knight arrives at Menelaus' court,
Where such his entertainment was, I find,
As justly might content a princely mind ;
For she was there to give him welcome tho,²
Who more his inward sense than eyes³ did know :
A lusty, brave, and lovely⁴ dame was she,
A lass well worthy to be Paris' fee,⁵

140

Helen entertains Paris.

The queen herself that hight fair Helena,
Whom yet unseen his thoughts did all obey ;
And by the hand she takes her new-come guest,⁶
And gives him entertainment of the best.

Yet stately Troy did flourish in her⁷ pride,
And Priam, whom no king⁸ might mate beside,
Till love and hate together did conspire
To waste this town with swift-devouring fire.⁹

The Prince of Troy gan easily now to see
How well her person with her¹⁰ fame did gree ;
When calling on Dame Venus for his due,

150

Menelaus goes from Sparta.

The King of Sparta with a lordly crew
Must post from home, and leave his wife, forsooth,
To give Sir Paris welcome for his tooth :

¹ Ed. 1589 "beeing."

² Then.

³ Ed. 1589 "eye."

⁴ Ed. 1589 "liuely."

⁵ Ed. 1604 "Whom *Venus* promis'd *Paris* for his fee."

⁶ Ed. 1604 "this gallant guest." ⁷ Ed. 1589 "his."

⁸ Ed. 1589 "prince."

⁹ Ed. 1589 "this Towne and Realme with wastful fire."

¹⁰ Ed. 1604 "his."

Thus Venus first, to help love's policy,
 Advantaged him¹ with opportunity.
 And now, as lovers wont their time t' espy,²
 This lover can his task full well apply,
 And strives to court his mistress cunningly,
 (No whit in fear of women's surquedry),³ 160
 Whose tender breast the conquering god of love,
 As will'd his dame, with arrow⁴ gan to prove,
 And found it fit for love's impression.
 No sooner was King Menelaus gone
 But Helen's heart had ta'en so great a flame
 As love increased with Paris' only name :⁵
 And now she doth⁶ survey his lovely face,
 And curiously observe each courtly grace ;
 And after large disputes of right and wrong,
 What did to love and womanhood belong,— 170
 Ah, that this love will not be over-ruled,⁷
 Ah, that these lovers nill⁸ be better school'd !—
 After sweet lines, that from this stranger's pen
 Came swiftly to her reading now and then,
 Regard of honour thrown aside by this,
 She arms her boldly to this great amiss ;⁹
 And, for her heart was from her body hent,¹⁰
 To Troy this Helen with her lover went,
 Helen courts Helen.
 Helen looks on Paris.
 Helen sails to Troy with Paris.

¹ Ed. 1604 "them."

² Ed. 1589 "times espie."

³ "i.e. presumption, arrogance.—This line is not in ed. 1589."—*Dyce*.

⁴ Ed. 1589 "arrowes."

⁵ Ed. 1604 "with sound of Paris name."

⁶ Ed. 1589 "gan."

⁷ Ed. 1589 "will be no better ralde." (Ed. 1604 "oreruled.")

⁸ Will not.

⁹ Crime.

¹⁰ Snatched.

Thinking, perdy,¹ a part contráry kind,²
 Her heart so raught,³ herself to stay behind. 180
 And thus hath Paris with his cunning caught
 The dainty bird that all so far he sought.

No sooner were they started thus away
 But straight⁴ the king, yet all too late a day,
 Had news of this unworthy traitorous⁵ deed,
 And after (says my story) makes some⁶ speed ;
 But hardy⁷ Love, that hath no leaden heels,
 Tied wings belike⁸ unto the Troyan's keels.

Paris lands
 in Troy.

Away flies Paris with his chasèd prey,
 As blithe⁹ as bird of morning's light in May, 190
 And lands in Troy the beauteous¹⁰ Helena ;
 Whom agèd Priam and Queen Hecuba,
 And¹¹ all their noble¹² sons and daughters too,
 Welcome with royal feasts and great¹³ ado,
 And every lovely dame and courtly¹⁴ knight
 Salute, to do their sovereign honour's right.¹⁵

The peers, the princes, and the lords of Greece,
 Touch'd with the rape of this reproachful piece,

¹ Verily.

² Nature.

³ Snatched away.

⁴ Ed. 1604 "that."

⁵ Ed. 1604 "treacherous."

⁶ For "makes some" ed. 1589 reads "gins to."

⁷ Ed. 1589 "conquering."

⁸ Ed. 1589 "Belike tide wings."

⁹ This line is not in ed. 1589.

¹⁰ Ed. 1589 "gallant."

¹¹ Ed. 1589 "With."

¹² Ed. 1604 "princely."

¹³ Ed. 1589 "much."

¹⁴ Ed. 1589 "lustie."

¹⁵ Ed. 1589 "Doe pay the Prince such honour as they might."

Not able to endure this¹ villany,
 Dishonour to their state and country,²
 In fury gan the quarrel undertake ;
 Not all alone for Menelaus' sake,
 But to rebuke and to avenge beside
 Helen's revolt,³ Paris' adulterous pride ;
 Making provision for a long-lived⁴ war,
 That wounded all so deep as⁵ yet the scar
 Remains, and will abide⁶ from day to day,
 That fretting⁷ Time shall never wear away.

The Greeks
 undertake
 Menelaus'
 quarrel.

In Aulis' gulf they mightly assemble,
 Whose power might make the proudest Troy to tremble :
 Lord Agamemnon there among them all,
 With Greeks' consent, was chosen general.

Aulis.

211 Agamemnon
 general of
 the Grecians.

Before this time a while, as I do⁸ read,
 Ulysses, by the wit⁹ of Palamede,
 Unhappy man,¹⁰ was fetched from Ithaca,
 Yet well could counterfeit a cause of stay
 To tarry with his wife Penelope ;
 But private cause must common cause obey,
 And though he feignèd¹¹ madness for the nonce,

Ulysses
 feigns
 madness.

¹ Ed. 1589 "Not suffering such barbarous,"

² Ed. 1604 "to the honor of the countrie." (*Country* has the value of a trisyllable.)

³ Ed. 1589 "false loue."

⁴ Ed. 1589 "lasting."

⁵ Ed. 1589 "and."

⁶ Ed. 1589 "endure."

⁷ Ed. 1589 "teeth of fretting," &c.

⁸ Ed. 1589 "can."

⁹ Ed. 1589 "meanes."

¹⁰ Dyce's copy of ed. 1604, which had been lent to him by Rodd the bookseller, wanted the leaf containing this and the three following lines.—The copy that I have used is also deficient here. (The copy before me doubtless belonged to Rodd.)

¹¹ Ed. 1589 "faind a."

Palamedes
deciphers
him.

Yet could ¹ Sir Palamedes all at once, 220
To sift his wife, lay down ² his tender son,
Whom while the sire refused to over-run,
That play'd the frantic ploughman there ³ in vain,
He roundly brought him to the ⁴ Argive train ;
Who, ⁵ for the hate he harbour'd in his head,
Accused ⁶ him to the camp, that doom'd him dead.

Ulysses'
revenge on
Palamede.
Achilles hid
by Thetis.

So Peleus' valiant ⁷ son, the great Achilles,
That lately ⁸ with the Grecians took the seas,
Restrain'd a while ⁹ in habit of a woman,
Unworthy wrong done to so brave a man, 230

Achilles
discovered
by Ulysses.

Ulysses with his toys and trifles trim,
In pedlar's base array, deciphered him.
The flower ¹⁰ of Greece and armies all by this,

The Greeks
stayed in
Aulis.

For want of wind, had ¹¹ hover'd long in Aulis :
What mighty men misdo the meaner rue ;
So great an ill by lingering did ¹² ensue.

¹ Ed. 1589 "can."

² Ed. 1589 "To try his wit, offer."

³ Ed. 1589 "all."

⁴ Ed. 1604 "brought vnto the."

⁵ Ed. 1589 "That."

⁶ Ed. 1589 "Nill cease till this Sir Palamede was dead."

⁷ Ed. 1589 "noble."

⁸ Ed. 1589 "loth'lie . . . went to seas."

⁹ Ed. 1589 :

"Clad by his dame in habite of a woman,
Vnworthy cowardize of a valiant man,
But that no cowardize this deede can hight
In him that was approu'd so good a knight,
Ulysses with his toys and tryfles trim
Full like a Pedler can decipher him."

¹⁰ Ed. 1589 "force."

¹¹ Ed. 1589 "haue."

¹² Ed. 1589 "dooth."

So far enraged ¹ was angry Artemis
 With Agamemnon's sin and small amiss
 For striking in the chase a gentle hind,
 The Grecians pine, Phœbe restrains the wind : 240
 And, will he, nill he, Agamemnon must,
 If he will termèd be a general just,
 Despatch some trusty messenger or page,
 Under pretext of love and ² marriage,
 To fetch to Aulis' strond ³ the Argive queen
 To see the spouses of fair Iphigen ; 250
 And Prince Achilles was her fere misnamed : ⁴
 But all untowardly the ⁵ business framed ;
 For Clytemnestra had espied ere long,
 At their arrive, the fetch and fatal wrong. ⁶
 In few, ⁷ the virgin slain in sacrifice,
 The Greeks have wind at will, the waters rise.
 How many ills do follow one annoy !
 Now merrily sail these ⁸ gallant Greeks to Troy,

Agamemnon
sends for
Iphigenia.

Clytemnes-
tra comes
to Aulis.

Iphigenia
sacrificed.

¹ Instead of lines 237-240, ed. 1589 has—

“ Nor was there other helpe but Iphigen,
 That might enforce the windes to blow agen.”

² Ed. 1589 “ pretence of loue or.”

³ Ed. 1589 “ gulfe.”

⁴ Ed. 1589 “ louer namde.” (*Fere*—husband.)

⁵ Ed. 1589 “ this.”

⁶ Ed. 1589 “ Whereto this subtile message did belong.” (*Fetch*—
 trick, stratagem.)

⁷ Ed. 1589 “ In fine.”

⁸ Ed. 1589 “ our.”

And scour the seas,¹ and keep their compass right :
 Away they fly, their tackling toft and tight,
 As shoots a streaming star in winter's night ;
 A thousand ships well rigg'd, a glorious sight,
 Waving ten thousand flags, they leave the port ;
 And, as ye wot, this war and tragic sport
 It was for Helena. 260

The King of Troy gan quickly² understand
 How Grecks with all their power were hard at hand ;
 And sadly do the peers their prince advise,
 The while in rage Cassandra calls and cries,
 "Render, ye Trojans, to these madding Grecks
 The dame that all this expedition seeks."

Cassandra's
counsel.

And to this battle, bruited far by fame,
 Great aid of arms on either party came :
 From Tyber³ and the quaking Tanais, 270
 To Troy, the queen of Amazons by this,
 Penthesilea, with her warlike band,
 Arrives⁴ in honour of King Priam's land.
 And over-long it were for me to tell
 In fury of this war⁵ what hap befell ;

Penthesilea
in aid of
Priam.

¹ Ed. 1589 :

"And scour the seas, & cheerly runne forth right,
 As shootes a streaming starre in winters night,
 Away they flye, their tackling teft and tight,
 Toppe and top-gallant in the brauest sort.
 And, as ye wote," &c.

² Ed. 1589 "King Priam now gan easelie."

³ "So both eds.—Qy. 'Tyras' or 'Ister'?"—*Dyce*. (Ed. 1604 "Fro Tyber.")

⁴ Ed. 1589 "Ariu'd."

⁵ Ed. 1589 "In this afflicting warre."

How many Greeks, how many Troyan knights,
 As chivalry by kind ¹ in love delights,
 Upon their helmets can their plumes advance,²
 And twist their ladies' colours on ³ their lance.
 So doth this love make men adventurous : ⁴ 280
 So hardy was the true knight Troilus,
 And all for love ⁵ of the unconstant Cressed,
 T' encounter with th' unworthy Diomed. 290
 But leave I here of Troilus ought ⁶ to say,
 Whose passions for the ranging Cressida,
 Read as fair ⁷ England's Chaucer doth unfold,
 Would tears exhale from eyes of iron mould.
 And that I may give ⁸ every man his right,
 Sir ⁹ Paris mounted, in his armour bright,
 Pricks forth, and on his helm his mistress' sleeve : 290
 How could that sight but Menelaus grieve ?
 And now the Greeks, and now the Troyans may,
 As pleaseth ¹⁰ Fortune, bear away the day.

Troilus.
 Diomede.
 Cressid.

¹ Nature.

² Ed. 1589 "Vpon their helmes their plumes can well aduaunce."

³ Ed. 1589 "in."

⁴ Ed. 1589 "So loue doth make them bold and venturous."

⁵ Ed. 1589 "All for pure *loue*."

⁶ "Ought"—omitted in ed. 1589.

⁷ Instead of this line and the next ed. 1589 has :

" Requires a vollume to vnfold at large ;
 And cunning neede he be that takes the charge,
 To paint the colloures of that chaunging peece,
 Staine to all Dames of Troy and stately Greece."

⁸ Ed. 1589 "doo."

⁹ Ed. 1604 "So."

¹⁰ Ed. 1604 "pleased."

Achilles in
love with
Polyxena.

The time¹ of truce set down by martial law,
The dames of Troy with lovely looks do draw
The hearts of many a knight,² and, lo, at last
The great Achilles is enthralld fast,
That night nor³ day he might his rest enjoy ;
So was his heart engagèd whole to Troy,
That now no more of arms this warrior would, 300
Or, shall⁴ I say, no more for love he could :
The camp complains upon his love and sloth,
And charge him with his knighthood and his oath.
Out⁵ Hector rides, surnamed the scourge of Greeks,
And, like the untamed panther, pries and seeks
Where he may prove his strength ;⁶ and, storming
thus,

Hector
killeth
Patroclus.

He lights upon Achilles' friend, Patroclus.
King Peleus' son, thus roused, soon gan⁷ him greet,
And, lion-like, runs fiercely⁸ him to meet,
For rescue of his friend, as he were wood,⁹ 310
And charging so his staff in furious mood,¹⁰
As falcon¹¹ wents to stoop upon his¹² prey,
Forgetful of the fair Polyxena,

¹ Ed. 1589 "times."

² Ed. 1589 "many Greekes."

³ Ed. 1589 "ne."

⁴ Ed. 1589 "mought."

⁵ Ed. 1589 "Now out rides Hector call'd the."

⁶ Ed. 1589 "might proove his force."

⁷ Ed. 1589 "When as the great Achilles gan."

⁸ Ed. 1589 "proudlie."

⁹ Mad.

¹⁰ Ed. 1589 "tight his staffe in eager moode."

¹¹ Ed. 1589 transposes lines 312-13.

¹² Ed. 1589 "her."

As Hector had unhorsed Patroclus tho,¹
 Despoiling him in field, the more the² woe,
 Unwares to wreak Patroclus' death³ beleek⁴
 He slays a peerless Troyan for a Greek ;
 And having thus perform'd this piece of⁵ treason,
 He triumphs in the spoils of Priam's son.

Achilles kills
 Hector.

The Grecians now do⁶ clap their hands for glee ; 320
 But blood will blood, so ever mought⁷ it be.

The Troyans' glory now gan waxen dim,
 And pale⁸ their hope, sith death had⁹ seizèd him
 That gave them hope and happy fortune too.

The mother-queen withouten more ado
 Gins¹⁰ whet her wits to wreak this malice done
 And tragic¹¹ murder of her valiant son.

When Hector's death was more than half forgot,
 Or at the least dissembled well, I wot,

Right wisely doth¹² this lady offer make,
 That if the Prince Achilles pleased¹³ to take

330

His love, her daughter Polyxene,¹⁴ to spouse,
 In Pallas' temple should they make their¹⁵ vows :

Hecuba
 offers
 Polyxena
 to Achilles.

And this the queen, that reck'd¹⁶ no law of arms,
 Vow'd clear to him and void of further harms.

¹ Then.

³ Ed. 1589 "this deede of his."

⁴ Belike.

⁶ Ed. 1589 "Now gan the Grecians."

⁸ Ed. 1589 "cold."

¹⁰ Ed. 1589 "Gan."

¹² Ed. 1589 "Full wiselie gan."

¹⁴ Ed. 1589 "Her daughter faire Polixena."

¹⁵ Ed. 1604 "he make his."

¹⁶ Ed. 1589 "And thus the qucene that knew."

² Ed. 1589 "alas for woe."

⁵ Ed. 1589 "murdrous."

⁷ Must.

⁹ Ed. 1589 "hath."

¹¹ Ed. 1589 "traitorous."

¹³ Ed. 1589 "list."

But when the ¹ Greek did little think of guile,
 To work revenge for Hector's death the while,
 Paris wounds Achilles in the heel. Even in the fatal place Sir Paris than ²
 With poison'd arrow rid ³ the heedless man ;
 And where his mother Thetis had him hent, 340
 Close to the heel th' envenomed shaft was sent.
 Achilles dies. Now lies the great Achilles dead in Troy ;
 The Greeks make moan, the Troyans leap for joy,
 And Priam doth bestow his bloodless bones
 Upon his discontented ⁴ Myrmidons.
 Immediately began an irksome ⁵ brawl
 Among the lords and Grecian princes ⁶ all
 About ⁷ the armour of this valiant knight.
 Contention 'twixt Ajax and Ulysses for Achilles' armour. Sir Ajax first doth claim it as his right ;
 So doth the gracious ⁸ Lord of Ithaca 350
 Look ⁹ for desert ¹⁰ to bear the prize away ;
 And of the two ¹¹ but one might it enjoy ;
 And plead they must upon the strond of Troy
 Before their ¹² ships, where Ajax in a heat,
 For that the stomach of the man was great,

¹ Ed. 1589 "this."² Then.³ Ed. 1589 :

" With poysoned shaft dispatcht the haples man ;
 And where his mother Thetis him not hent,
 Directlie thether was his arrowe sent."

⁴ Ed. 1589 "wretched hartles."⁵ Ed. 1589 "a bloodie."⁶ Ed. 1589 "Greekish captaines."⁷ Ed. 1589 "Touching."⁸ Ed. 1589 "And then gainst him the."⁹ Ed. 1589 "Thinkes."¹⁰ Ed. 1604 "deserts."¹¹ Ed. 1589 "twayne."¹² Ed. 1589 "the."

Lays open to the Greeks his service done
 In their affairs since first this war¹ begun,
 And twits Ulysses with his cowardice :
 But, Ajax, this for thee may not suffice,
 For though the targe were over-huge² to bear, 360
 And great Achilles' casque³ unfit to wear
 For wise Laertes' son, yet policy,
 The sinews and true⁴ strength of chivalry,
 Is that whereof this knight might⁵ chiefly vaunt ;
 So with his words he can⁶ their wits enchant,
 That, when he must conclude and say no more,
 He⁷ shows the fatal sign that to the shore
 He⁷ stole by night from Troy, and then quoth he, 370
 " Here, Greeks, bestow it if you nil⁸ give it me."
 Wherewith he won their hearts, and charm'd their eyes,
 And from Lord Ajax got this⁹ martial prize : 371
 The man, whom wrath and fury overcame,
 Dishonour'd¹⁰ with the Greeks, ill brook'd the shame,
 But sought foul means basely to stint the strife,
 And with a deadly stab reaved his own life.

Palladium.

Ulysses wins
the armour.

And now this wasteful war that lasted long,
 To dames of Troy and Greece a tedious wrong,

¹ Ed. 1604 " those warres."² Ed. 1589 " ouerbig."³ Ed. 1589 " stoute Achilles helme."⁴ Ed. 1589 " That hight indeede the."⁵ Ed. 1589 " Was that whereof this Knight doth."⁶ Ed. 1589 " gan."⁷ Ed. 1589 " A."⁸ Ed. 1589 " Bestowe it heere yee Greekes if ye nil."⁹ Ed. 1589 " Sir Ajax got the."¹⁰ Ed. 1589 :

" Not able to endure this open shame,
 Foulie sought violent meanes to stint this strife."

With hot encounter and unhappy fight,
 And tragic end¹ of many a hardy knight,
 Gan sort² to this, that Greeks, to blear the eyes
 Of³ Troyans, gin take counsel and advice

381

The Troyans'
 horse.

To rear by art a huge unwieldy frame,
 Much like a horse; and having fraught⁴ the same
 With men of war, they make a cunning⁵ show,
 As if⁶ from Troy they homewards⁷ meant to go,
 And raise the siege, and leave the prize behind,
 But gods do know they nothing less did⁸ mind;
 For, as I ween, my history doth say,

The Greeks
 retire to
 Tenedos.

To Tenedos the⁹ Grecians slunk away,¹⁰
 An isle that gave them harbour and abode :
 Now leave we there these Greeks to lie at road.

390

Amidst this hurly-burly and uproar,

Polydore,
 King Priam's
 son.

King Priam sends away young Polydore,
 With store of treasure and with¹¹ mickle muck,
 His youngest son, to Thrace : but little luck
 Ensued hereof ;¹² for Pylmnestor, lo,

Polymnes-
 tor, King of
 Thrace,
 murders
 Polydore.

The thirst of Priam's pillage working¹³ so,
 A woful tale, as I have heard it told,
 Murthers this prince for lucre of his gold.

¹ Ed. 1589 "hast'ned death."

² Ed. 1589 "grow."

³ Ed. 1589 :

"Of their foreweried foes, began deuisse :

And hauing built a great vvweldie frame," &c.

⁴ Ed. 1589 "and well ystuft."

⁵ Ed. 1589 "subtill."

⁶ Ed. 1589 "though."

⁷ Ed. 1589 "homeward."

⁸ Ed. 1589 "doo."

⁹ Ed. 1604 "these."

¹⁰ Ed. 1589 "tooke their way."

¹¹ Ed. 1604 "of."

¹² Ed. 1589 "this deede."

¹³ Ed. 1589 "riches choakt him."

The traitorous ¹ Sinon, for his villany
 Th' infamous ² author of Troy's tragedy,
 While subtle Grecians lurk'd in ³ Tenedos,
 Gan with the silly Troyans highly glose,
 And tell a tale that sounded like a ⁴ truth,
 A tale that moved the hearers' hearts to ⁵ ruth ;
 And so bewitch'd King Priam and his court,
 That now at last, to 'Troyans' fatal hurt,
 Instead of that might most their states advance,
 They greed ⁶ to hoise this engine of mischance,
 And make a breach, like fools, and never lin ⁷
 Till their own hands had pull'd their enemies in.
 Thus riot, rape, and vain credulity,
 Bin nam'd chief causes ⁸ of Troy's tragedy.
 This ⁹ monstrous horse, that in his spacious ¹⁰ sides
 A traitorous troop of armèd ¹¹ Grecians hides,
 Gan now discharge his vast and hideous load,
 And spread his bloody bowels all ¹² abroad.
 It was the time when midnight's sleep and rest
 With quiet pause the town of Troy possess'd ;
 The Greeks forsake their ¹³ ships and make return :
 Now Troy, as was foretold, began to burn,

400 Sinon's
treason.

410 The Troyans
receive the
horse into
the town.

Night.

420 Troy set on
fire by the
Greeks.

¹ Ed. 1589 "subtile."

² Ed. 1589 "noted."

³ Ed. 1589 "When traytrous Greekes had sluncke to."

⁴ Ed. 1589 "perdie of little trueth."

⁵ Ed. 1589 "Although as it befell of mickle."

⁶ Ed. 1589 "gree."

⁷ *i.e.* Cease.

⁸ Ed. 1589 "authors."

⁹ Ed. 1589 "The."

¹⁰ Ed. 1589 "hugie."

¹¹ Ed. 1589 "throung of substill."

¹² Ed. 1589 "And silently disperse his strength."

¹³ Ed. 1589 "the."

And Ilium's lofty ¹ towers to smoke apace ;
 The conquering foe begins ² amain to chase
 Th' affrighted Phrygians, that now ³ unawares
 False Sinon had entrappèd ⁴ in his snares.
 Ah, what a piercing sight it was to see
 So fair ⁵ a town as Troy was said to be,
 By quenchless fire laid level with the soil,
 The prince and people made the soldiers' spoil !
 Th' unhappy Priam mazed with frights and fears, 430
 Seeing his palace flame about his ears,
 Out of his wretched slumber hastily start,⁶
 And, weening to have play'd a young man's part,
 Girds-to ⁷ his arming-sword ⁸ with trembling hand ;
 But she that erst brought forth ⁹ the fatal brand
 That fired the town, the most unhappy queen,
 Whose like for wretchedness ¹⁰ was never seen,
 Said, "Leave, my lord ; becomes not us ¹¹ to strive,
 Whom would no morning sun might see alive !
 And fly from aid of men to powers divine, 440
 And so with me lay hold on Phœbus' shrine."
 But he, whose bloody mind and murdering rage
 Nor awe ¹² of gods nor reverence of age
 Could temper from a deed so tyrannous,
 Achilles' son, the fierce unbridled Pyrrhus,

Pyrrhus.

¹ Ed. 1589 "statelie."² Ed. 1589 "Greekes begin."³ Ed. 1589 "And follow fast their foes, that."⁴ Ed. 1589 "betrapped."⁵ Ed. 1589 "braue."⁶ Started.⁷ Ed. 1589 "Girts to."⁸ A large two-handed sword.⁹ Ed. 1589 "But she alas that bare."¹⁰ Ed. 1589 "wretched hap."¹¹ Ed. 1589 "vs not."¹² Ed. 1589 "lawe."

His father's angry ghost¹ enticing him,
 With slaughtering hand, with visage pale and grim²
 Hath hent³ this agèd Priam by the hair,
 Like butcher bent to slay; and even there,
 The man that lived so many golden years, 450
 The⁴ great commander of such lordly peers,
 The King of Troy, the mighty King of Troy,
 With cruel iron this cursèd Greekish boy
 Rids of his life, as whilom he had done
 With shaft envenom'd⁵ Paris, old Priam's son.
 Thus souls by swarms do press to Pluto's hall;
 Thus, naked Troy, or now not Troy at all,
 Done is thy pride, dim is thy glittering⁶ gite,⁷
 Slain⁸ is thy prince in this unhappy fight.

Priam slain
 at the altar
 by Pyrrhus.

My pen, forbear to write of Hecuba, 460
 That made the sun his glistering⁹ chariot stay,
 And raining tears his golden face to hide,
 For ruth of that did after her¹⁰ betide;
 Sith this thrice-wretched lady lived¹¹ the last,
 Till Fortune's spite and malice all was past,
 And, worn with sorrows,¹² wexen fell and mad:
 And all the happiness that Priam had

Hecuba
 mad.

¹ For "angry ghost" ed. 1589 reads "ghost belike."

² Ed. 1589 "dim." ³ Seized.

⁴ Ed. 1589 "The Lord and Maister," &c.

⁵ Ed. 1589 "With poysond shaft."

⁶ Ed. 1589 "glorious." ⁷ Splendour.

⁸ Ed. 1589 "Dead."

⁹ Ed. 1589 "That made the glorious Sunne his Chariot."

¹⁰ For "after her" ed. 1589 reads "afterwards."

¹¹ Ed. 1589 "Sith this vnhappy queene suruiude," &c.

¹² Ed. 1589 "sorrow."

In his mishap¹ and bloody funeral,
 Was that he saw not yet the end of all—
 Polyxena sacrific[ced] 470
 Astyanax. His daughters² ravish'd, slain in sacrifice ;
 Astyanax, before his mother's eyes,
 Hector's sweet boy,³ thrown from the highest tower :
 Thus to our end⁴ there needeth but an hour.
 Short tale to make, when thus⁵ the town of Troy
 The Greeks had sack'd, to Asia's great annoy,
 Paris slain by Pyrrhus. When Pyrrhus had the guilty Paris slain,
 Lo, now at last the Greeks have home again,
 With loss of many a Greek and Trojan's life,
 Menelaus receives Helen. Æneas. Their⁶ wither'd flower, King Menelaus' wife.
 The good Æneas, whom the gods beleek⁷ 480
 Reserved some better future⁸ hap to seek,
 Anchises. With old Anchises, leaves this conquer'd⁹ town
 And, on the seas y-tossèd up and down,
 Arrives at¹⁰ Lavine land, when he had seen
 Dido. The bounty of the famous¹¹ Carthage queen,
 Whom,¹² forced by fate, this wandering knight deceived,
 That him and his so royally received.
 My author says, to honour Helen's¹³ name,
 That through the world hath been belied by fame,

¹ Ed. 1589 "mishaps."

² Ed. 1604 "children." (Only one daughter, Cassandra, was ravished.)

³ Ed. 1589 "The princelie babe."

⁴ Ed. 1589 "deathes."

⁵ Ed. 1589 "first."

⁶ Ed. 1589 "Vnhappy Helen, Menelaus wife."

⁷ Belike.

⁸ Ed. 1589 "some further better happe."

⁹ Ed. 1589 "wretched."

¹⁰ Ed. 1589 "in."

¹¹ Ed. 1604 "bounteous."

¹² Ed. 1589 "Whom driuen by fates."

¹³ "To honour Helen's name" is the reading of ed. 1589.—Ed. 1604 "in favour of her name."

How when the king her fere ¹ was absent thence, 490
(A tale that well may lessen her offence,
Sir Paris took the town by arms and skill,
And carried Helen ² thence against her will ;
Whom whether afterward she loved or no,
I cannot tell, but may imagine so.

¹ Husband.

² Ed. 1589 "And carried her to Troy," &c.

AN ECLOGUE GRATULATORY,
ETC.

An Eglogve. Gratulatorie. Entituled: To the right honorable, and renowned Shepheard of Albions Arcadia: Robert Earle of Essex and Ewe, for his welcome into England from Portugall. Done by George Peele. Maister of arts in Oxon. At London; Printed by Richard Jones, and are to be solde at the signe of the Rose and Crowne, ouer against the Faulcon. 1589. 4to.

“For a printed copy of this poem,” says Dyce, “I have sought long in vain; but a transcript of it which was once in the possession of Malone, and afterwards belonged to the late Mr. Heber, has luckily come into my hands.” It is curious that Dyce was not aware that Heber possessed a printed copy of the *Eglogve*. In the sale-catalogue *Bibliotheca Heberiana*, Part IV., it is numbered 1801. It was acquired by the Bodleian Library (*Malone Collection, No. 818 Add.*) No other copy is known.

Early in April 1589 Essex rode to Plymouth, joined the Swiftsure, and was at Falmouth before Drake and Norris had put to sea. He was the first who waded to the shore at Penichia (16th May); and when the English were about to attack Lisbon he went up to the gates and offered to fight any of the garrison in the name of his royal mistress. Soon a letter from Elizabeth arrived to demand his immediate return; and Drake and Norris insisted that he should obey. When he started from London he had left letters to state that he would return alive at no one's bidding.—See Mr. S. L. Lee's article on Essex in the *Dict. of Nat. Biography*.

THE RIGHT HONOURABLE EARL
OF ESSEX.

HIS WELCOME INTO ENGLAND FROM PORTUGAL.

—o—

PIERS. PALINODE.

Dicite,¹ Iö pæan, et, Iö, bis dicite, pæan!
In patriam rediit magnus Apollo suam.

PALINODE.

Herdgroom, what gars² thy pipe to go so loud?
Why bin thy looks³ so smicker⁴ and so proud?
Perdy,⁵ plain Piers, but this couth⁶ ill agree
With thilk⁷ bad fortune that aye thwarteth thee.

PIERS.

That thwarteth me, good Palinode, is fate,
Y-born was Piers to be infortunate;
Yet shall my bag-pipe go so loud and shrill
That heaven may entertain my kind good-will; 10
Iö, iö pæan!

1 "This line is from Ovid, *Ar. Am.* ii. 1."—*Dyce.*

2 Makes.

3 Old ed. "bookes."

4 Gay, smirking.

5 *Par Dieu*, verily.

6 Could.

7 This same.

PALINODE.

Sot, I say, losel,¹ lewdest² of all swains,
 Sing'st thou proud pæans on these open plains?
 So ill sitteth this strain, this lofty note,
 With thy rude tire and grey russet coat.

PIERS.

Grey as my coat is, green all are my cares,
 My grass to dross, my corn is turn'd to tares;
 Yet even and morrow will I never lin³
 To make my crowd⁴ speak as it did begin;
Iö, iö pæan! 20

PALINODE.

Thou art too crank,⁵ and crowdest all too high;
 Beware a chip fall not into thine eye:
 Man, if triumphals here be in request,
 Then let them chant them that can chant them best.

PIERS.

Thou art a sour swain, Palinode, perdy;
 My bag-pipe vaunteth not of victory:
 Then give me leave sonizance⁶ to make
 For chivalry and lovely learning's sake!
Iö, iö pæan!

¹ Worthless fellow.² Rudest.³ Cease.⁴ Fiddle.⁵ Bold.⁶ Sounding.

PALINODE.

Thou hardy herdsman, darest thou of arms chant? 30
Sike¹ verse, I tell thee, ought have a great vaunt :
Then how may thy boldness scape a fine frump?²
War's laud is matter for the brazen trump.

PIERS.

Of arms to sing I have nor lust nor skill ;
Enough is me to blazon my good-will,
To welcome home that long hath lackèd been,
One of the jolliest shepherds of our green ;
Iö, iö pæan !

PALINODE.

Tell me, good Piers, I pray thee tell it me,
What may thilk jolly swain or shepherd be, 40
Or whence y-comen, that he thus welcome is,
That thou art all so blithe to see his bliss?

PIERS.

Palinode, thou makest a double demand,
Which I will answer as I understand ;
Yet will I not forget, so God me mend,
To pipe loud pæans as my stanzas end ;
Iö, iö pæan !

Thilk shepherd, Palinode, whom my pipe praiseth,
Whose glory my reed to the welkin raiseth,

¹ Such.

² Flirt, flout.

He's a great herdgroom, certes, but no swain, 50
 Save hers that is the flower of Phœbe's plain ;

Iö, iö pæan !

He's¹ well-allied and lovèd of the best,
 Well-thew'd,² fair and frank, and famous by his crest ;
 His Rain-deer, racking³ with proud and stately pace,
 Giveth to his flock a right beautiful grace ;

Iö, iö pæan !

He waits where our great shepherdess doth wun,⁴
 He playeth in the shade, and thriveth in the sun ;
 He shineth on the plains, his lusty flock him by, 60
 As when Apollo kept⁵ in Arcady ;

Iö, iö pæan !

Fellow in arms he was in their flow'ring days⁶
 With that great shepherd, good Philisides ;⁷
 And in sad sable did I see him dight,
 Moaning the miss⁸ of Pallas' peerless knight ;

Iö, iö pæan !

¹ Old ed. "He is."

² "Well-thew'd"—of good quality, gentle manners.

³ Moving at a pace between an amble and a trot.

⁴ Dwell.

⁵ Resided.

⁶ Old ed. "flowing deies." (Corrected in the transcript used by Dyce.)

⁷ The poetical name assumed by Sir Philip Sidney.

⁸ Loss. (All the courtiers went into mourning on the death of Sidney. "It was accounted a sin," says the author of the *Life and Death of Sir Philip Sidney*, "for any gentleman of quality, for many months after, to appear at Court or City in any light or gaudy apparel.")

With him he served, and watch'd, and waited late,¹
To keep the grim wolf from Eliza's gate ;
And for their mistress, thoughten these two swains, 70
They moughten ² never take too mickle pains ;
Iö, iö pæan !

But, ah for grief! that jolly groom is dead,
For whom the Muses silver tears have shed ;
Yet in this lovely swain, source of our glee,
Mun ³ all his virtues sweet reviven be ;
Iö, iö pæan !

PALINODE.

So moughten they, Piers, and happily thrive
To keepen this herdsman after death alive :
But whence, I pray thee tell me, come is he, 80
For whom thy pipe and pæans make such glee ?

PIERS.

Certes, sir shepherd, comen he is fro ⁴ far,
Fro wrath of deepest seas and storm of war,
Safe is he come—O, swell, my pipe, with joy !—
To the old buildings of new-rearèd Troy ;⁵
Iö, iö pæan !

Fro sea, fro shore, where he with swink ⁶ and sweat
Felt foeman's rage and summer's parching heat,

¹ Old ed. "fate." (Corrected in Dyce's transcript.)

² Might.

³ Must.

⁴ From.

⁵ Troynovant,—London.

⁶ Hard toil.

Safe is he come, laden with honour's spoil :
 O, swell, my pipe, with joy, and break the while ; 90
Iö, iö pæan !

PALINODE.

Thou foolish swain that thus art overjoy'd,
 How soon may here thy courage be accoy'd !¹
 If he be one come new fro western coast,
 Small cause hath he, or thou for him, to boast.

I see no palm, I see no laurel-boughs
 Circle his temple or adorn his brows ;
 I hear no triumphs for this late return,
 But many a herdsman more disposed to mourn.

PIERS.

Pale lookest thou, like spite, proud Palinode ; 100
 Venture doth loss, and war doth danger bode :
 But thou art of those harvesters, I see,
 Would at one shock spoil all the filberd-tree ;
Iö, iö pæan !

For shame, I say, give virtue honours due !
 I'll please the shepherd but by telling true :
 Palm mayst thou see and bays about his head,
 That all his flock right forwardly hath led ;
Iö, iö pæan !

¹ Daunted.

With Mars his viceroy¹ and a golden drake,² 130
 So that of him me durst no notice take ;

Iö, iö þæan !

But now return'd, to royalize his fame,
 Whose mighty thoughts at honour's trophies aim,
 Lest worthily I moughten witned³ be,
 I welcome him with shepherd's country glee ;

Iö, iö þæan !

And of his dread adventures here sing I,
 Equivalent with the Punic chivalry,
 That brake his lance with terror and renown 140
 Against the gates of slaughter'd Remus' town ;

Iö, iö þæan !

And was the first of many thousands more
 That at Penichia⁴ waded to the shore :
 There couth he lead his landed flock so far,
 Till 'a was left of men approved in war ;

Iö, iö þæan !

O honour's fire, that not the brackish sea
 Mought quench, nor foeman's fearful 'larums lay !
 So high those golden flakes done mount and climb 150
 That they exceed the reach of shepherd's rhyme ;

Iö, iö þæan !

¹ " Mars his viceroy "—Sir John Norris.

² Dragon (Sir Francis Drake).

³ Blamed.

⁴ See Hakluyt's *Principal Navigations*, ii. pt. ii. p. 144.

PALINODE.

What boot thy welcomes, foolish-hardy swain ?
Louder pipes than thine are going on this plain ;
Fair Eliza's lasses and her great grooms
Receive this shepherd with unfeign'd welcomes.

Honour is in him that doth it bestow ;
Thy reed is rough, thy seat is all too low,
To writen sike praise : hadst thou blithe Homer's quill,
Thou moughtst have matter equal with thy skill. 160

PIERS.

Twit me with boldness, Palin, as thou wilt,
My good mind be my glory and my guilt ;
Be my praise less or mickle, all is one,
His high deserts deserven to be known ;

Iö, iö þæan !

So cease, my pipe, the worthies¹ to record
Of thilk great shepherd, of thilk fair young lord ;
Leave him with luck to those well-tunèd lays
That better ken to sound sike shepherd's praise ;

Iö, iö þæan !

Now time is near to pen our sheep in fold, 171
And evening air is rheumatic and cold.

For my late songs plead thou, my pure good-will !
Though new-come oncc, brave earl, yet welcome still !

Iö, iö þæan !

¹ Worthy acts.

POLYHYMNIA.

Polyhymnia Describing, The honourable Triumph at Tyllt, before her Maiestie, on the 17. of Nouember last past, being the first day of the three and thirtieth yeare of her Highnesse raigne. With Sir Henrie Lea, his resignation of honour at Tyllt, to her Maiestie, and receiued by the right honorable, the Earle of Cumberland. Printed at London, by Richard Ihones 1590. 4to.

On the back of the title is :

"Polyhymnia, Entituled, with all dutie to the Right Honourable, Lord Compton of Compton. By George Peele, Maister of Artes in Oxforde."

There is a copy of *Polyhymnia* among the books that William Drummond bequeathed to Edinburgh University Library. Another copy is in the Duke of Devonshire's library. Bliss lent Dyce "a MS. copy which was discovered in an old family mansion in Oxfordshire, and which, like other old transcripts of our early poetry, has several variations from the printed copy."

The following extract from Segar's *Honor, Military and Ciuill*, 1602, being the whole 54th Chapter of the 3d Book, entitled "*The originall occasions of the yeerely Triumphs in England*," is given in Nichols' *Progresses of Q. Elizabeth*, vol. iii., and by Dyce :—

"Here will we remember also (and I hope without enuie so may) that these annuall exercises in armes, solemnized the 17. day of Nouember, were first begun and occasioned by the right vertuous and honourable Sir Henry Lea, Master of her highnesse Armorie, and now deseruingly Knight of the Most Noble Order, who, of his great zeale and earnest desire to eternize the glory of her maiesties court, in the beginning of her happy reigne, voluntarily vowed (vlesse infirmity, age, or other accident did impeach him), during his life, to present himselfe at the tilt armed, the day [the anniversary of Elizabeth's succession] aforesayd yeerely, there to performe, in honor of her sacred maiestie, the promise he formerly made. Whereupon the lords and gentlemen of the sayd

court, incited by so worthy an example, determined to continue that custome, and, not vnlke to the antient Knighthood della Banda in Spaine, haue euer since yerely assembled in armes accordingly: though true it is, that the author of that custome (being now by age ouertaken) in the 33. yeere of her maiesties reigne resigned and recommended that office vnto the right noble George Earle of Cumberland. The ceremonies of which assignation were publiquely performed in presence of her maiestie, her ladies and nobilitie, also an infinite number of people beholding the same, as followeth.

“ On the 17. day of Nouember, anno 1590, this honourable gentleman, together with the Earle of Cumberland, hauing first performed their seruice in armes, presented themselues vnto her highnesse, at the foot of the staires vnder her gallery-window in the Tilt-yard at Westminster, where at that time her maiestie did sit, accompanied with the Vicount Turyn Ambassador of France, many ladies, and the chiefest nobilitie.

“ Her maiestie, beholding these armed knights comming toward her, did suddenly heare a musicke so sweete and secret, as euery one thereat greatly marueiled. And hearkening to that excellent melodie, the earth, as it were, opening, there appeared a Pauilion, made of white taffata, containing eight score elles, being in proportion like vnto the sacred Temple of the Virgins Vestall. This Temple seemed to consist upon pillars of pourferry, arched like vnto a church: within it were many lampes burning; also on the one side there stood an altar couered with cloth of gold, and thereupon two waxe candles burning in rich candlesticks; upon the altar also were layd certaine princely presents, which after by three virgins were presented vnto her maiestie. Before the doore of this Temple stood a Crowned Pillar, embraced by an Eglantine-tree, whereon there hanged a table; and therein written (with letters of gold) this prayer following:

ELIZAE, &c.

Piæ, potenti, fællicissimæ virgini,
fidei, pacis, nobilitatis vindici,
cui Deus, astra, virtus,
summa deuouerunt
omnia.

Post tot annos, tot triumphos,
animam ad pedes positurus
tuos,
sacra senex
affixit arma.

Vitam quietam, imperium, famam
 æternam, æternam
 precatur tibi,
 sanguine redempturus suo.
 Ultra columnas Herculis
 columna moueatur tua.
 Corona superet coronas omnes,
 ut quam cœlum felicissime
 nascenti coronam dedit,
 beatissima moriens reportes cœlo.
 Summe, Sancte, Æterne,
 audi, exaudi,
 Deus.

“ The musicke aforesayd was accompanied with these verses, pronounced and sung by M. Hales her maiesties seruant, a gentleman in that arte excellent, and for his voice both commendable and admirable :

“ My golden locks time hath to siluer turned ;
 (Oh time too swift, and swiftnes neuer ceasing !)
 My youth 'gainst age, and age at youth hath spurnd,
 But spurnd in vaine ; youth waineth by encreasing :
 Beauty, strength, and youth, flowers fading beene ;
 Duety, faith, and loue, are rootes and euer greene.

My helmet now shall make an hieue for bees,
 And louers songs shall turne to holy psalmes ;
 A man-at-arms must now sit on his knees,
 And feed on pray'rs, that are old ages almes :
 And so [though ?] from court to cottage I depart,
 My saint is sure of mine vnspotted hart.

And when I sadly sit in homely cell,
 I'll teach my swaines this carrol for a song,—
 Blest be the hearts that thinke my souereigne well,
 Curs'd be the soules that thinke to doe her wrong !
 Goddess, vouchsafe this aged man his right,
 To be your beadsman now that was your knight.

“ The gifts which the vestall maydens presented unto her maiesty, were these : a vaile of white exceeding rich and curiously wrought ; a cloke and safegard set with buttons of gold, and on them were grauen emprezes of excellent deuise ; in the loope of euery button was a noble-mans badge, fixed to a pillar richly embrodered.

“ And here (by way of digression) let vs remember a spech which this noble gentleman vsed at such time as these buttons were set upon the garment aforesaid : ‘ I would ’ (quoth he) ‘ that all my friends might

haue bene remembred in these buttons, but there is not roome enough to containe them all; and if I haue them not all, then' (said hee) 'those that are left out may take exception.' Whereunto another standing by, answered: 'Sir, let as many be placed as can be, and cause the last button to be made like the character of &c.' 'Now, Godamercie, with all my heart' (quoth the Knight), 'for I would not haue giuen the *Catena* of my friends for a million of gold.'

"But to returne to the purpose,—these presents and prayer being with great reuerence deliuered into her maiesties owne hands, and he himselfe disarmed, offered vp his armour at the foot of her maiesties Crowned Pillar; and kneeling vpon his knees, presented the Earle of Cumberland, humbly beseeching she would be pleased to accept him for her knight, to continue the yeerely exercises aforesaid. Her majesty graciously accepting of that offer, this aged knight armed the earle, and mounted him vpon his horse. That being done, he put vpon his owne person a side coat of blacke veluet pointed vnder the arme, and couered his head (in lieu of an helmet) with a buttoned cap of the country fashion.

"After all these ceremonies, for diuers dayes hee ware vpon his cloake a crowne embrodered, with a certaine motto or deuce, but what his intention therein was, himselfe best knoweth.

"Now to conclude the matter of assignation, you shall vnderstand that this noble gentleman, by her maiesties expresse commandement, is yerely (without respect vnto his age) personally present at these military exercises, there to see, suruey, and as one most carefull and skilfull to direct them; for indeed his vertue and valour in arms is such as deserueth to command. And touching that point I will let you know the opinion of Monsieur de Champany, a gentleman of great experience and notable obseruation, who at his beeing embassadour in England for causes of the Low-Countreys, and writing to his friends there, in one of his intercepted letters, among other occurrents, these words were found: 'I was' (quoth he) 'one day by Sir Christopher Hatton, Capitaine of her maiesties guard, inuited to Eltham, an house of the queenes, whereof he was the guardian. At which time I heard and saw three things that in all my trauel of France, Italy, and Spaine, I neuer heard or saw the like. The first was a consort of musicke, so excellent and sweet as cannot be expressed. The second a course at a bucke with the best and most beautifull greyhounds that euer I did behold. And the third a man-of-arnes excellently mounted, richly armed, and indeed

the most accomplished cavaliero I had euer seene. This knight was called Sir Henry Lea, who that day (accompanied with other gentlemen of the court) onely to doe me honour, vouchsafed at my returne to Greenwich to breake certaine lances: which action was performed with great dexterity and commendation.'

"Thus much was the substance (and well neere the whole circumstance) of Sir Henry Lea his last taking of armes: wherein he seemed to imitate the auncient Romanes, who hauing serued a conuenient time, and claiming the priuiledges due to old souldiers (whome they called *emeriti*), did come into Campo Martio, euery man leading his owne horse; and there offered his armes vnto Mars in presence of the chiefe magistrates: which ceremony Scipio, Cassius, the Great Pompey, with many other noble captaines, disdained not to doe.

"Summarily, these annuall actions haue bene most nobly performed (according to their times) by one Duke, 19 Earles, 27 Barons, 4 Knights of the Garter, and aboue 150 other Knights and Esquiers."—P. 197.

THE NAMES OF THE LORDS AND
GENTLEMEN THAT RAN, AND THE ORDER
OF THEIR RUNNING.

—o—

THE COUPLES.

I.	VII.
SIR HENRY LEE and The EARL OF CUMBERLAND.	MASTER ROBERT CAREY and MASTER WILLIAM GRESHAM.
II.	VIII.
The LORD STRANGE and MASTER THOMAS GERRARD.	SIR WILLIAM KNOWLES [and] MASTER ANTHONY COOKE.
III.	IX.
The LORD COMPTON and MASTER HENRY NOWELL.	SIR THOMAS KNOWLES [and] SIR PHILIP BUTLER.
IV.	X.
The LORD BURKE and SIR EDWARD DENNY.	MASTER ROBERT KNOWLES [and] MASTER RALPH BOWES.
V.	XI.
The EARL OF ESSEX and MASTER FULK GREVILLE.	MASTER THOMAS SIDNEY [and] MASTER ROBERT ALEXANDER.
VI.	XII.
SIR CHARLES BLOUNT [and] MASTER THOMAS VAVASOR.	MASTER JOHN NEDHAM [and] MASTER RICHARD ACTON.
XIII.	
MASTER CHARLES DAVERS [and] MASTER EVERARD DIGBY.	

POLYHYMNIA.



WHEREFORE, when thirty-two were come and gone,
Years of her reign, days of her country's peace,
Elizabeth, great empress of the world,
Britannia's Atlas, star of England's globe,
That sways the massy sceptre of her land,
And holds the royal reins of Albion ;
Began the gladsome sunny day to shine,
That draws in length date of her golden reign,
And thirty-three she numbereth in her throne,
That long in happiness and peace I pray 10
May number many to these thirty-three.
Wherefore it fares as whilom and of yore,
In armour bright and sheen fair England's knights,
In honour of their peerless sovereign,
High mistress of their service, thoughts, and lives,
Make to the tilt amain ; and trumpets sound,
And princely coursers neigh and champ the bit :
When all, address'd for deeds of high devoir,
Preace ¹ to the sacred presence of their prince

¹ Press.

The First Couple. { SIR HENRY LEE,¹
 { THE EARL OF CUMBERLAND.²

Mighty in arms, mounted on puissant horse, 20
 Knight of the crown, in rich embroidery,
 And costly fair caparison charged with crowns,
 O'ershadow'd with a wither'd running vine,
 As who would say, "My spring of youth is past,"
 In corselet gilt of curious workmanship,
 Sir Henry Lee, redoubted man-at-arms,
 Leads in the troops : whom worthy Cumberland,
 Thrice-noble earl, accoutred as became
 So great a warrior and so good a knight,
 Encounter'd first, y-clad in coat of steel, 30
 And plumes and pendants all as white as swan,
 And spear in rest, right ready to perform
 What 'long'd unto the honour of the place.
 Together went these champions, horse and man,
 Thundering along the tilt ; that at the shock
 The hollow gyring vault of heaven resounds.
 Six courses spent, and spears in shivers split,

¹ Son of Sir Anthony Lee by Dame Margaret, daughter of Sir Henry Wyatt. He was esteemed "the fairest man-at-arms and most complete courtier of his times," in the words of William Scott, who wrote the inscription for his monument (*Nichols' Prog. of Q. Eliz.*, iii. 44). In 1611, "having served five succeeding princes, and kept himself right and steady in many dangerous shocks, and three utter turns of state, with a body bent to earth and a mind erected to heaven, aged 80, knighted 60 years, he met his long attended end."

² George Clifford, third Earl of Cumberland, 1558-1605, a famous naval commander. See an account of him by Prof. Laughton in *Dict. of Nat. Biog.*

The Second Couple. { THE LORD STRANGE,¹
 { MASTER THOMAS GERRARD.²

The Earl of Derby's valiant son and heir,
 Brave Ferdinand Lord Strange, strangely embark'd
 Under Jove's kingly bird the golden eagle, 40
 Stanley's old crest and honourable badge,
 As veering 'fore the wind in costly ship,
 And armour white and watchet buckled fast,
 Presents himself; his horses and his men
 Suited in satin to their master's colours,
 Well near twice-twenty squires that went him by :
 And having by his trouchman³ pardon craved,
 Vailing⁴ his eagle to his sovereign's eyes,
 As who would⁵ say, "Stoop, eagle, to this sun,"
 Dismounts him from his pageant, and atonce,⁶ 50
 Taking his choice of lusty stirring horse
 Cover'd with sumptuous rich caparisons,
 He mounts him bravely for his friendly foe ;
 And at the head he aims, and in his aim
 Happily thrives, and breaks his azure staves.
 Whom gentle Gerrard, all in white and green,
 Colours belike best serving his conceit,
 Lustily meets, mounted in seat of steel,

¹ Ferdinand Lord Strange, eldest son of Henry Stanley fourth Earl of Derby. Born in 1559, he succeeded as fifth earl in 1593, and died in 1594.

² Eldest son of Sir Gilbert Gerard, master of the rolls, was created Baron Gerard of Gerard's Bronley in 1603 and died in 1617.

³ *Truchman*,—interpreter.

⁴ *Lowering*.

⁵ "So *Ox*, *MS.*—Here the old ed. has 'should'; but in three other places of the poem it has 'As who *would* say.'"—*Dyce*.

⁶ At once.

With flourishing plume and fair¹ caparison ;
 And then at every shock the shivers fly, 60
 That recommend their honours to the sky.

The Third Couple. { THE LORD COMPTON,²
 { MASTER HENRY NOWELL.

Next, in the virgin's colours, as before
 Ran Cumberland, comes lovely Compton in ;
 His courser trapp'd in white, and plumes and staves
 Of snowy hue, and squires in fair array,
 Waiting their lord's good fortune in the field ;
 His armour glittering like the moon's bright rays,
 Or that clear silver path, the milk-white way,
 That in Olympus leads to Jove's high court.
 Him noble-minded Nowell³ pricks to meet, 70
 All arm'd in sables, with rich bandalier,⁴
 That baldrick-wise he ware, set with fair stones
 And pearls of Inde, that like a silver bend
 Show'd on his varnish'd corselet black as jet ;
 And beauteous plumes and bases⁵ suitable ;
 And on his stirrup waits a trusty train
 Of servants clad in tawny⁶ liveries :

¹ "*Ox. MS.* 'rich.'"—*Dyce.*

² William, son of Henry first Lord Compton, succeeded to the title in 1589 ; was created Earl of Northampton in 1618 ; died in 1630.

³ "*Ox. MS.* :

' Him noble-minded Nowell pricks to meet,
 Brave Nowell fam'd for courtship and for arms,
 All in black armour, with rich bandalier.'"—*Dyce.*

⁴ A leathern belt worn over the left shoulder.

⁵ An embroidered skirt worn by knights on horseback.

⁶ So old ed.—*Dyce* (silently) "purple."

And to't they go, this lord and lusty knight,
To do their royal mistress honour's right.

The Fourth Couple. { THE LORD BURKE,¹
SIR EDWARD DENNY.²

When, mounted on his fierce and foaming steed, 80
In riches and in colours like his peers,
With ivory plumes, in silver-shining arms,
His men in crimson dight and staves in red,
Comes in Lord Burke, a fair young Ireland lord,
Bent chiefly to the³ exercise of arms :
And bounding⁴ in his princely mistress' eye,
Chargeth his staff, when trumpet calls away,
At noble Denny's head, brave man-at-arms,
That furiously, with flaming sword in hand,
(As if the God of War had sent him down, 90
Or, if you will, to show his burning zeal
And forwardness in service of her person,⁵
To whom those martial deeds were consecrate,)
Speeds to the tilt amain, rich as the rest ;
Himself, his horse, his pages, all in green,
Green velvet, fairly garnish'd horse and man.

¹ Probably Thomas, sixth Lord Burgh, who died in 1594.

² Grandson of Sir Anthony Denny, Henry VIII.'s favourite. He became Earl of Norwich in 1626.

³ " *Ox. MS.* ' to the princely.'—*Dyce.*

⁴ " *Ox. MS.* :

' And bounding in his royal mistress' eye,
(Askances thus, I come to honour thee,
Chargeth,' &c."—*Dyce.*

⁵ " *her person*] *Ox. MS.* ' the day,' omitting the next line."—*Dyce.*

The Fifth Couple. { THE EARL OF ESSEX,
MASTER FULK GREVILLE.

Then proudly shocks amid the martial throng
Of lusty lancers, all in sable sad,
Drawn on with coal-black steeds of dusky hue,
In stately chariot full of deep device, 100
Where gloomy Time sat whipping on the team,
Just back to back with this great champion,—
Young Essex, that thrice-honourable earl ;
Y-clad in mighty arms of mourner's dye,¹
And plume as black as is the raven's wing,
That from his armour borrow'd such a light
As boughs of yew receive from shady stream :
His staves were such, or of such hue at least,
As are those banner-staves that mourners bear ;
And all his company in funeral black ;² 110
As if he mourn'd to think of him he miss'd,
Sweet Sidney, fairest shepherd of our green,
Well-letter'd warrior, whose successor he
In love and arms had ever vow'd to be :
In love and arms, O, may he so succeed
As his deserts, as his desires would speed !
With this great lord must gallant Greville run,
Fair man-at-arms, the Muses' favourer,³
Lover of learning and of chivalry,
Sage in his saws, sound judge of poesy ; 120

¹ "So *Ox. MS.*—Old ed. 'hue' (which occurs a little before and a little after this line)."—*Dyce.*

² "*funeral black*] *Ox. MS.* 'black beheest' (*i.e.*, I suppose, 'black behears'd')."—*Dyce.*

³ So old ed.—*Dyce* (silently) "favourite."

That lightly mounted makes to him amain,
 In armour gilt and bases full of cost.
 Together go these friends as enemies ;
 As when a lion in a thicket pent,
 Spying the boar all bent to combat him,
 Makes through the shrubs and thunders as he goes.

The Sixth Couple. { SIR CHARLES BLOUNT,¹
 MASTER THOMAS VAVASOR.²

And then, as blithe as bird of morning's light,
 Inflamed with honour, glistening as the sun
 What time he mounts the sweating lion's back,
 Beset with glorious sun-shine of his train, 130
 Bearing the sun upon his armèd breast,
 That like a precious shining carbuncle,
 Or Phœbus' eye, in heaven itself reflects,—
 Comes Sir Charles Blount, in or and azure dight ;
 Rich in his colours, richer in his thoughts,
 Rich in his fortune, honour, arms, and art.
 And him the valiant Vavasor assails,
 On fierce and ready horse, with spear in rest,
 In orange-tawny, bright and beautiful, -
 Himself, his men, and all : and on they speed, 140
 And haste they make to meet, and meet they do,
 And do the thing for which they meet in haste ;
 Each in his armour amiable to see,
 That in their looks bear love and chivalry.

¹ Born 1563, died 1606 ; eighth Lord Mountjoy 1594 ; created Earl of Devonshire (for his services in Ireland) in 1604. He married (?) Lady Penelope Rich.

² Created a baronet in 1628. The baronetcy is still extant.

The Seventh Couple. { MASTER ROBERT CAREY,¹
 MASTER WILLIAM GRESHAM.²

By this the trump call'd Carey to the tilt,
 Fair bird, fair cygnet of our silver swan ;
 When, like a lord in pomp and princely show
 And like a champion fitted for the war,
 And not unlike the son of such a sire,
 Under a plume of murrey and of white, 150
 That like a palm-tree beautifully spread,
 On mighty horse of Naples³ mounted fair,
 And horse at hand and men and pages pight,⁴
 All with a Burning Heart greets he her grace,
 Whose gracious countenance he his heaven esteems,
 And to her sacred person it presents,⁵
 As who would say, "My heart and life⁶ is hers,
 To whom my loyalty this heart prefers."
 And at the summons out his foeman flies,
 Gresham, the heir of golden Gresham's⁷ land, 160
 That beautified New Troy with Royal Change,

¹ Seventh and youngest son of Henry Carey, first Lord Hunsdon. It was he who hurried north with such unseemly haste to convey the news of Elizabeth's death to James. He was created Earl of Monmouth by Charles I., and died in 1639.

² Cousin of Sir Thomas Gresham.

³ "Next to the English horse," says Gervase Markham in *The English Horseman*, 1617, "I place the courser of Naples, which is a horse of a strong and comely fashion, of great goodness, loving disposition, and an infinite courageousness."

⁴ Placed, fixed.

⁵ "Ox. MS. :

'And to her majesty the same presents.'"—*Dyce*.

⁶ "heart and life] Ox. MS. 'life and all.'"—*Dyce*.

⁷ Sir Thomas Gresham, the founder of the Royal Exchange.

Badge of his honour and magnificence :
 Silver and sable, such his colours were,
 And ready was his horse, and readier he,
 To bound, and well behave him in her eye,
 Upon whose looks his life and honour stood.
 Then horse and man conspired to meet amain ;
 Along the tilt Carey and Gresham go,¹
 Swift as the swallow, or that Greekish nymph²
 That seem'd to overfly the ears³ of corn : 170
 And break they do, they miss not, as I ween,
 And all was done in honour of their queen.

The Eighth Couple. { SIR WILLIAM KNOWLES,
 MASTER ANTHONY COOKE.

Then, like the three Horatii in the field,
 Betwixt the Roman and the Alban camp,
 That triumph'd in the royal right of Rome,
 Or old Duke Aymon's glory,⁴ Dordogne's pride,
 Came in the noble English Nestor's⁵ sons,
 Brave Knowles his offspring, hardy champions ;
 Each in his plumes, his colours, and device,
 Expressing warrior's wit and courtier's grace. 180

¹ " *Ox. MS.* ' glide.' "—*Dyce*.

² This must be a mistake. Peele must certainly allude to the Volscian Camilla (see *Æneid*, book vii.).

³ So *Dyce*.—Old ed. "eyies."

⁴ The romance of *The Four Sons of Aymon* (from the French *Les Quatre Fils Aymon*) was published by Caxton about 1489. Another edition (of which no copy is extant) was issued by Wynkyn de Worde in 1504 ; and a third by R. Copland in 1554.

⁵ Sir Francis Knollys, appointed in 1569 to the custody of Mary Queen of Scots ; was treasurer of the Queen's Household.—Sir William Knollys, created Baron Knollys in 1603 and Earl of Banbury in 1626, died (aged 88) in 1632.

Against Sir William ran a lusty ¹ knight ;
 Fine in device he was and full of wit,
 Famous beyond the chalky British cliffs,
 And loved and honour'd in his country's bounds,
 Anthony Cooke,² a man of noble name,
 For arms and courtship equal to the best :
 Valour and Virtue sat upon his helm,
 Whom Love and lowering Fortune led along,
 And Life and Death he portray'd in his show ;
 A liberal Hand, badge of nobility, 190
 A Heart that in his mistress' honour vows
 To task his hand in witness ³ of his heart,
 Till age shake off war's rough ⁴ habiliments.
 Then with such cunning can they couch their staves,
 That worthily each knight himself behaves.

The Ninth Couple. { SIR THOMAS KNOWLES,⁵
 { SIR PHILIP BUTLER.

The youngest brother, Mars his sworn man,
 That wan his knightly spurs in Belgia,
 And follow'd dub of drum in fortune's grace,
 Well horsed and arm'd, Sir Philip Butler greets ;
 The noble Essex friend and follower, 200
 In mourning sable dight by sympathy,

¹ " *Ox. MS.* 'gentle.'"—*Dyce.*

² Afterwards Sir Anthony Cooke. He was grandson of the Sir Anthony Cooke who had been tutor to Edward VI.

³ " *Ox. MS.* 'trial.'"—*Dyce.*

⁴ "So *Ox. MS.*—Old ed. 'rough wars.'"—

⁵ Fifth and youngest son of Sir Francis Knollys ; a well-known commander in the Low Countries.—The Robert Knowles, mentioned on the next page, was the third son of Sir Francis.

A gentle knight ; and meekly ¹ at the tilt
 He stands, as one that had no heart to hurt
 His friendly foe : but at the trumpets sound
 He flies along ; and bravely at the face
 His force he bends : the rival of his fame
 Spurs on his steed, nor shuns the shock for fear :
 And so they meet ; the armour bears the scar
 Of this encounter and delightful war.

The Tenth Couple. { MASTER ROBERT KNOWLES,
 { MASTER RALPH BOWES.²

The last, not least, of these brave bretheren,³ 210
 Laden with honour and with golden boughs,⁴
 Entering the lists, like Titan arm'd with fire
 When in the queachy⁵ plot Python he slew,
 Bowes takes to task with strong and mighty arm,⁶
 Right richly mounted : horse and man it seem'd
 Were well agreed to serve as roughly there
 As in the enemy's reach for life they would ;⁷
 And, when they ran, methought a tempest rose,
 That in the storm the clattering armours sound,
 As horse and man had both been borne to ground. 220

The Eleventh Couple. { MASTER THOMAS SIDNEY,
 { MASTER ROBERT ALEXANDER.

Thus long hath dainty Sidney sit and seen

¹ " *Ox. MS.* 'A knight well-thew'd ; and mildly.'"—*Dyce.*

² Son of Robert Bowes, English ambassador in Scotland.

³ So old ed.,—to show that the word is to be pronounced as a tri-syllable.

⁴ " *Ox. MS.* 'leaves.'"—*Dyce.*

⁵ See note 4, vol. i. p. 142.

⁶ " *Ox. MS.* 'stout and sturdy lance.'"—*Dyce.*

⁷ " *Ox. MS.* 'and fame.'"—*Dyce.*

Honour and Fortune hover in the air,
 That from the glorious beams of England's eye
 Came streaming ; Sidney, at which name I sigh,
 Because I lack the Sidney that I loved,¹
 And yet I love the Sidneys that survive.

Thus long, I say, sat Sidney and beheld
 The shivers fly of many a shaken spear ;
 When, mounted on a courser trapp'd in white,
 And throughly well-appointed he and his, 230
 Pure sparks of virtue kindling honour's fire,
 He thought he might, and, for he might, he would
 Reach at this glory,—fair befall him still !—
 And to the tilt, impatient of delay,
 He comes, encounter'd with a threatening point
 That Alexander menaced to him fast,
 A valorous and a lusty gentleman,
 Well-fitted with his armour and his steed ;
 And him young Sidney sits, and had he charged
 The Macedonian Alexander's staff, 240
 He had been answer'd by that valiant youth :²
 So well behaved himself this fair young knight,
 As Paris had to great Achilles' lance
 Applied his tender fingers and his force.

The Twelfth Couple. { MASTER [JOHN] NEDHAM,
 { MASTER RICHARD ACTON.

The next came Nedham in on lusty horse,
 That, angry with delay, at trumpet's sound

¹ "So *Ox. MS.*—Old ed. 'loue.'"—*Dyce.*

² "*Ox. MS.* 'this lovely boy.'"—*Dyce.*

Would snort, and stamp, and stand upon no ground,
 Unwilling of his master's tarriance :
 Yet tarry must his master, and with him
 His prancing steed ; till trumpets sounding shrill 250
 Made Acton spur apace, that, with applause
 Of all beholders, hied him lustily,
 As who would say, "Now go I to the goal :"
 And then they ride, and run, and take their chance,
 As death were fix'd at point of either's lance.

The Thirteenth Couple. { MASTER CHARLES DAVERS,¹
 { MASTER EVERARD DIGBY.²

Now drew this martial exercise to end ;
 And Davers here and Digby were the last
 Of six-and-twenty gallant gentlemen,
 Of noble birth and princely resolution,
 That ran in compliment, as you have heard, 260
 In honour of their mistress' holiday ;
 A gracious sport, fitting that golden time,
 The day, the birth-day of our happiness,
 The blooming time, the spring of England's peace.
 Peace, then, my Muse ; yet, ere thou peace, report,
 Say how thou saw'st these actors play their parts,
 Both mounted bravely, bravely minded both,
 Second to few or none for their success ;
 Their high devoir, their deeds do say no less.

¹ Sir Charles Danvers, executed as one of Essex's fellow-conspirators in 1601. See *Dict. Nat. Biog.*

² One of the Gunpowder Plot conspirators. He was executed in 1605. See *Dict. Nat. Biog.*

And now had England's queen, fair England's life,¹
 Beheld her lords, and lovely lordly knights, 271
 Do honour's service to their sovereign :
 And heaven by this distill'd down tears of joy,
 In memory and honour of this day.

SIR HENRY LEE *resigns his place of honour at tilt to*
the EARL OF CUMBERLAND.

And now, as first by him intended was,
 In sight of prince, and peers, and people round,
 Old Henry Lee, Knight of the Crown, dismounts ;²
 And in a fair pavilion hard at hand,
 Where holy lights burn'd on the hallow'd shrine
 To Virtue or to Vesta consecrate, 280
 Having unarm'd his body, head and all,
 To his great mistress his petition makes ;
 That, in regard and favour of his age,
 It would so please her princely majesty³
 To suffer him give up his staff and arms,
 And honourable place wherein he served,
 To that thrice-valiant earl whose honour's pledge
 His life should be. With that he singled forth
 The flower of English knights, the valiant Earl
 Of Cumberland ; and him, before them all, 290
 He humbly prays her highness to accept,
 And him install in place of those designs ;

¹ " *Ox. MS.* 'eye.'"—*Dyce.*

² " *Ox. MS.* 'alights.'"—*Dyce.*

³ " *Ox. MS.* 'royal excellence.'"—*Dyce.*

And to him gives his armour and his lance,
 Protesting to her princely majesty,
 In sight of heaven and all her lovely¹ lords,
 He would betake him to his orisons,
 And spend the remnant of his waning age,
 Unfit for wars and martial exploits,
 In prayers for her endless happiness.
 Whereat she smiles, and sighs, and seem'd to say, 300
 "Good woodman, though thy green be turn'd to grey,
 Thy age past April's prime² and pleasant May,
 Have thy request; we take him at thy praise:
 May he succeed the honour of thy days!"
 "Amen," said all, and hope they do no less;
 No less his virtue and nobility,
 His skill in arms and practice³ promiseth.
 And many champions such⁴ may England live to have,
 And days and years as many such⁵ as she in heart can
 crave!

¹ "So *Ox. MS.*—Old ed. 'princely.'—*Dyce.*

² "*Ox. MS.* 'spring.'—*Dyce.*

³ "*Ox. MS.* 'honour.'—*Dyce.*

⁴ "*Ox. MS.* 'moe.'—*Dyce.*

⁵ "*Ox. MS.* 'moe.'—*Dyce.*

A SONNET.¹

His golden locks time hath to silver turn'd ;
O time too swift, O swiftness never ceasing !
His youth 'gainst time and age hath ever spurn'd,
But spurn'd in vain ; youth waneth by increasing :
Beauty, strength, youth, are flowers but fading seen ;
Duty, faith, love, are roots, and ever green.

His helmet now shall make a hive for bees,
And, lovers' sonnets turn'd to holy psalms,
A man-at-arms must now serve on his knees,
And feed on prayers, which are age his alms : 10
But though from court to cottage he depart,
His saint is sure of his unspotted heart.

And when he saddest sits in homely cell,
He'll teach his swains this carol for a song,—
“ Bless'd be the hearts that wish my sovereign well,
Cursed be the souls that think her any wrong ! ”
Goddess, allow this aged man his right,
To be your beadsman now that was your knight.

¹ This “ sonnet ” is set to music in the first book of John Dowland's *Songs and Airs*, 1597.—It has been erroneously attributed to the Earl of Essex.

SPEECHES

TO

QUEEN ELIZABETH AT THEOBALD'S.

Speeches to Queen Elizabeth at Theobalds.

The *Hermit's Speech* was first printed by J. P. Collier, from a MS. in his possession, in *The History of English Dramatic Poetry*, 1833, with the following prefatory remarks: "In 1591 Queen Elizabeth paid a visit to Lord Burghley, at Theobalds, where, it seems, she was received with much solemnity, although the Lord Treasurer did not himself make his appearance to welcome her. In March, 1587, he had lost his mother at a very advanced age, and in April, 1589, his wife, to whom he was deeply attached, died: in the interval, also, his daughter, Lady Oxford, had expired, so that in 1591, depressed by these misfortunes, he had resolved to retire from public life, and the visit of the Queen was, perhaps, intended to revive his spirits, and to recall him to her active service. Mr. Nichols, in his *Progresses*, under this date, relates all that was known upon this point, and without being able to explain it, inserts from Strype a sort of mock writ or summons, directed to Sir Christopher Hatton, the object of which was, by a little official playfulness, to withdraw Lord Burghley from his seclusion: in that document he is spoken of as a Hermit; and it seems clear, that since the death of his wife, two years and some months anterior, he had quitted his noble mansion in disgust, and, making only occasional visits to court, had resided in some obscure cottage in the neighbourhood of Theobalds. A MS. poem, in blank verse, has fallen into my hands, which serves to explain the whole proceeding: it is a speech supposed to be delivered by a Hermit to the Queen, on her first arrival at Theobalds, the purpose of which was to excuse the absence of Lord Burghley, by stating that he had taken up his abode in the cell belonging to the Hermit, in consequence of his grief, and had enjoined the Hermit to do the honours of the house in his stead. Robert Cecil, knighted just afterwards, was the person who pronounced the speech, and he referred to it when the Queen again came to Theobalds in 1594. It was written by a poet no less distinguished than George Peele, who was employed by Lord Burghley's son to aid the scheme; for the mock writ, before mentioned, which puzzled Strype, and, as he says, defied commentary, is besought by the individual in the disguise of a Hermit. The whole piece is in the poet's handwriting, and his initials, G. P., are subscribed at the end."—Vol. i. pp. 283-4.

The MS. of the second and third speeches came into Collier's hands at a later date. Collier lent it to Dyce, who printed it in his edition of Peele.

SPEECHES

TO

QUEEN ELIZABETH AT THEOBALD'S.

—o—

I.

THE HERMIT'S SPEECH.

My sovereign lady, and most gracious queen,
Be not displeas'd that one so meanly clad
Presumes to stand thus boldly in the way
That leads into this house accounted yours ;
But, mild and full of pity as you are,
Hear and respect my lamentable tale.

I am a hermit that this ten years' space
Have led a solitary and retirèd life,
Here in my cell, not past a furlong hence.
Till by my founder, he that built this house, 10
Forgetful of his writing and his word,
Full sore against my will I was removed ;
For he, o'ertaken with excessive grief,
Betook him to my silly hermitage,
And there hath lived two years and some few months,

By reason of these most bitter accidents ;
 As, first of all, his agèd mother's death,
 Who lived a fifth and saw her four descents
 Of those that lineally have sprung from her ;
 His daughter's death, a countess of this land, 20
 Lost in the prime and morning of her youth ;
 And, last of all, his dear and loving wife.
 These brought him to this solitary abode,
 Where now he keeps,¹ and hath enjoined me
 To govern this his house and family,
 A place unfit for one of my profession ;
 And therefore have I oft desired with tears,
 That I might be restorèd to my cell,
 Because I vow'd a life contemplative ;
 But all in vain ; for, though to serve your majesty, 30
 He often quits the place and comes to court,
 Yet thither he repairs, and there will live.
 Which I perceiving, sought by holy prayers
 To change his mind and ease my troubled cares ;
 Then, having many days with sacred rites
 Prepared myself to entertain good thoughts,
 I went up to the lantern of this hall,
 The better to behold God's works above ;
 And suddenly, when my devotion gan
 To pierce the heavens, there² did appear to me 40
 A lady clad in white, who closed my eyes,
 And, casting me into a slumbering trance,
 " I am," said she, " that holy prophetess

¹ Resides.

² MS. " that."

Who sung the birth of Christ ere he appear'd ;
Sibylla is my name ; and I have heard
The moan thou mak'st for thy unquiet life :
Take thou this table,¹ note the verses well ;
Every first golden letter of these lines
Being put together signify her name
That can and will relieve thy misery ; 50
And therefore presently go search her out,
A princely paragon, a maiden queen,
For such a one there is and only one :"
And therewithal she vanish'd was again.
After this vision, coming down from thence,
The bruit was that your majesty would come ;
But yet my founder kept his hermitage,
And gave me warrant to provide for all,
A task unfitting one so base as I,
Whom neither sons nor servants would obey ; 60
The younger like to scorn my poor advice,
Because that he hereafter in this place
Was to become the guardian of this house,
And so the same to settle in his blood
By that young babe, whom I have heard of late
By your appointment bears my founder's name ;
Therefore I wish, for my good founder's sake,
That he may live, with this his first-born son,
Long time to serve your sacred majesty,
As his grandfather faithfully hath done. 70
Now, since you know my most distressèd plight,

¹ Table-book, note-book.

My guardian's carelessness which came by care,
 I humbly crave these verses may be read,
 Whose capital letters make ELIZABETH,
 By you, my noble Lord High Admiral ;
 The rather for [that] this great prophethess
 Seem'd unto me as if she had foretold
 Your famous victory o'er that Spanish navy
 Which by themselves was term'd Invincible.
 Seeing in these lines your princely name is writ 80
 The miracle of time and nature's glory,
 And you are she of whom Sibylla spake,
 Vouchsafe to pity this your beadman's plaint,
 And call my founder home unto his house,
 That he may entertain your majesty,
 And see these walks, wherein he little joys,
 Delightful for your highness and your train ;
 Wherein likewise his two sons that be present
 Will be both dutiful and diligent,
 And this young Lady Vere, that's held so dear 90
 Of my best founder, her good grandfather.
 And lastly for myself, most gracious queen,
 May it please you to restore me to my cell,
 And, at your highness' absolute command,
 My Lord High Chancellor may award a writ
 For peaceable possession of the same ;
 And that [your] majesty's Lord Chamberlain
 May from your highness have the like command
 To cause my founder, now the guardian
 Of this [fair] house, increased for your delight, 100
 To take the charge thereof this present night :

Which being done, I'll to my hermitage,
And for your highness pray continually,
That God may pour upon you all his blessings,
And that the hour-glass of your happy reign
May run at full and never be at wane.
Thus having naught of value or of worth
Fit to present to such a peerless queen,
I offer to your highness, here, this bell,
A bell which hermits call Saint Anthony, 110
Given me by my noble lord and founder ;
And I'll betake me to this brazen bell,
Which better me beseems ten thousand fold
Than any one of silver or of gold.

Finis. G. P.

II.

THE GARDENER'S SPEECH.

Most fortunate and fair queen, on whose heart Wisdom hath laid her crown, and in whose hands Justice hath left her balance, vouchsafe to hear a country controversy, for that there is as great equity in defending of poor men's onions as of rich men's lands.

At Pymms,¹ some four miles hence, the youngest son of this honourable old man (whom God bless with as many years and virtues as there be of him conceived

¹ "Qy. 'Mimms'?"—*Dyce*.

hopes [and] wishes!) devised a plot for a garden, as methought, and in a place unfit for pleasure, being overgrown with thistles and turned up with moles, and besides so far from the house that, in my country capacity, a pound had been meeter than a paradise. What his meaning was I durst not inquire, for *sunt animis celestibus iræ*; but what my labours were I dare boast of. 16

The moles destroyed and the plot levelled, I cast it into four quarters. In the first I framed a maze, not of hyssop and thyme, but that which maketh time itself wither with wondering; all the Virtues, all the Graces, all the Muses winding and wreathing about your majesty, each contending to be chief, all contented to be cherished: all this not of potherbs, but flowers, and of flowers fairest and sweetest; for in so heavenly a maze, which astonished all earthly thought's promise, the Virtues were done in roses, flowers fit for the twelve Virtues, who have in themselves, as we gardeners have observed, above an hundred; the Grace[s] of pansies partly-coloured,¹ but in one stalk, never asunder, yet diversely beautified; the Muses of nine several flowers, being of sundry natures, yet all sweet, all sovereign. 31

These mingled in a maze, and brought into such shapes as poets and painters use to shadow, made mine eyes dazzle with the shadow, and all my thoughts amazed to behold the bodies. Then was I commanded to place

¹ "i.e. parti-coloured: 'there budded out the checkerd paunsie or partly-coloured harts-ease'—Greene's *Quip for an Upstart Courtier*, Sig. B. ed. 1620."—*Dyce*.

an arbour all of eglantine, in which my master's conceit outstripped my cunning: "Eglantine," quoth he, "I most honour, and it hath been told me that the deeper it is rooted in the ground, the sweeter it smelleth in the flower, making it ever so green that the sun of Spain at the hottest cannot parch it." 41

As he was telling me more, I, intending¹ my work more than his words, set my spade with all force into the earth, and, at the first, hit upon the box. This rat-catcher (as children do when any thing is found) cried, "Half!" which I denying, [he] claimed all, because he killed the moles, and if the moles had not been destroyed, there had been no garden; if no garden, no digging; if no digging, no box found. At length this box bred boxes betwixt us; till weary of those black and blue judges, we determined to appeal to your majesty, into whose hands we both commit the box and the cause, [I] hoping that this weaselmonger, who is no better than a cat in a house or a ferret in a cony-gat,² shall not dissuade your majesty from a gardener whose art is to make walks pleasant for princes, to set flowers, cast knots, graft trees, to do all things that may bring pleasure and profit; and so to give him one gird for all, as much odds as there is between a woodcleaver and a carpenter, so great difference in this matter is between the mole-catcher and the gardener. 61

¹ Attending to.

² Rabbit-burrow.

WRITTEN ABOUT THE BOX.

I was a giant's daughter of this isle,
 Turn'd to a mole by the Queen of Corn :
 My jewel I did bury by a wile,
 Again never from the earth to be torn,
 Till a virgin had reigned thirty-three years,
 Which shall be but the fourth part of her years.

 III.

THE MOLECATCHER'S SPEECH.

Good lady, and the best that ever I saw, or any shall, give me leave to tell a plain tale, in which there is no device, but desert enough. I went to seek you at Greenwich; and there it was told me that the queen was gone from the court: I wondered that the body should start from the shadow. Next was I pointed to Hackney; there they said the court was gone into the country: I had thought to have made hue and cry, thinking that he that stole fire from heaven had stolen our heaven from earth. At the last I met with a post who told me you were at Theobald's: I was glad, for that next your majesty I honour the owner of that house, wishing that his virtues may double his years and yours treble.

14

I cannot discourse of knots and mazes: sure I am

that the ground was so knotty that the gardener was amazed to see it; and as easy had it been, if I had not been, to make a shaft of a cammock¹ as a garden of that croft. I came not to claim any right for myself, but to give you yours; for that, had the bickering been between us, there should have needed no other justice of peace than this,² to have made him a mittimus to the first gardener that ever was, Adam. 23

I went to lawyers to ask counsel, who made law like a plaice, a black side and a white; "for," said one, "it belongeth to the lord of the soil, by the custom of the manor." "Nay," said the other, "it is treasure trove." "What's 'that?'" quoth I. "Marry, all money or jewels hidden in the earth are the queen's." *Noli me tangere*: I let go my hold, and desire your majesty that you will hold yours. 31

Now, for that this gardener twitteth me with my vocation, I could prove it a mystery not mechanical, and tell the tale of the giant's daughter which was turned to a mole because she would eat fairer bread than is made of wheat, wear finer cloth than is made of wool, drink neater wine than is made of grapes; why she was blind, and yet light of hearing; and how good clerks told me that moles in fields were like ill subjects in commonwealths, which are always turning up the place in which they are bred. But I will not trouble your

¹ "A crooked tree; also a crooked beam, or knee of timber, used in ship-building, &c."—*Nares*.

² "His molespade." *Marginal note in MS.*

majesty, but every day pray on my knees that all those that be heavens at your state may come to a mole's blessing,—a knock on the pate and a swing on a tree. Now, madam, for this gardener, command him to end his garden, and, till his melancholy be past, let him walk in the alleys, and pick up worms like a lapwing. 47

THE HONOUR OF THE GARTER.

*The Honovr of the Garter. Displaied in a Poeme gratulatorie :
Entitled to the worthie and renowned Earle of Northumberland.
Created Knight of that Order, and installd at Windsore. Anno Regni
Elizabethæ. 35. Die Junii. 26. By George Peele, Maister of Artes
in Oxenforde. At London, Printed by the Widdowe Charlewood, for
John Busbie, and are to be sold at the West doore of Paules. 4to.
[1593.]*

On the back of the title are the arms of Elizabeth with the motto
“*Semper eadem*,” and under them these verses :

“ *Gallia victa dedit flores, invicta Leones
Anglia ; ius belli in flore, leon suum :
O sic O semper ferat Elizabetha triumphos[,]
Inclyta Gallorum flore[,] leone suo.*”

It appears from “A Book of Payments” (1592-4) preserved at
Alnwick Castle that Peele received three pounds from the Earl of
Northumberland for this gratulatory poem. Under date 23rd June 1593
is the entry, “delivered Mr. Warnour at my Lord’s appointment to give
to one Geo. Peele, a poett, as my Lord’s liberality, £3.” (Hist. MSS.
Comm. Rep., vi. Rep., p. 227.)

AD MÆCENATEM PROLOGUS.

PLAIN is my coat, and humble is my gait :
Thrice-noble earl, behold with gentle eyes
My wit's poor worth, even for your nobléss,
Renowmèd lord, Northumberland's fair flower,
The Muses' love, patron, and favourite,
That artisans and scholars dost embrace,
And clothest Mathesis in rich ornaments ;
That admirable mathematic skill,
Familiar with the stars and zodiac,
To whom the heaven lies open as her book ; 10
By whose directions undeceivable,
Leaving our schoolmen's vulgar trodden paths,
And following the ancient reverend steps
Of Trismegistus and Pythagoras,
Through uncouth¹ ways and unaccessible,
Dost pass into the spacious pleasant fields
Of divine science and philosophy ;
From whence beholding the deformities
Of common errors, and world's vanity,
Dost here enjoy that sacred sweet content 20

¹ Unfrequented.

That baser souls, not knowing, not affect :
 And so by Fate's and Fortune's good aspect
 Raised, in thy height, and these unhappy times,
 Disfurnish'd wholly of heroical spirits
 That learning should with glorious hands uphold,
 (For who should learning underbear but he
 That knows thereof the precious worthiness,
 And sees true science from base vanity ?)
 Hast in regard the true philosophy
 That in pure wisdom seats her happiness. 30
 And you the Muses, and the Graces three,
 You I invoke from heaven and Helicon,
 For other patrons have poor poets none,
 But Muses and the Graces, to implore.
 Augustus long ago hath left the world,
 And liberal Sidney, famous for the love
 He bare to learning and to chivalry,
 And virtuous Walsingham are fled to heaven.
 Why thither speed not Hobbin and his feres,¹
 Great Hobbinol,² on whom our shepherds gaze, 40
 And Harington,³ well-letter'd and discreet,
 That hath so purely naturalizèd
 Strange words, and made them all free denizens ?

¹ Companions.

² "Old ed. '*Hobbinall*.'—*Hobbinol*, as most readers are aware, was the poetic name of Gabriel Harvey, and *Colin Clout* that of Spenser : but that Spenser is meant here I have no doubt : in *England's Helicon*, 1600, is a poem attributed to *Spenser* called *Hobbinol's Dittie in praise of Eliza, Queene of the Shepheards*."—*Dyce*.

³ Sir John Harington's *Orlando Furioso* was published in 1591.

Why thither speeds not Rosamond's trumpeter,¹
 Sweet as the nightingale? Why go'st not thou,
 That richly cloth'st conceit with well-made words,
 Champion,² accompanied with our English Fraunce,³
 A peerless sweet translator of our time?
 Why follow not a thousand that I know,
 Fellows to these, Apollo's favourites, 50
 And leave behind our ordinary grooms,
 With trivial humours to pastime the world,
 That favours Pan and Phœbus both alike?
 Why thither post not all good wits from hence,
 To Chaucer, Gower, and to the fairest Phaer
 That ever ventured on great Virgil's works?⁴
 To Watson, worthy many epitaphs
 For his sweet poesy, for Amyntas' tears⁵
 And joys so well set down? And after thee

¹ Samuel Daniel, whose *Complaint of Rosamond* was first published in the 1592 edition of *Delia*.

² At this early date none of Dr. Thomas Campion's charming lyrics had been published; but they had been circulated in manuscript. There are some of them in *Harl. MS. 6910*, which was written not later than 1596. Campion published a little volume of Latin epigrams in 1595.

³ It was cruel to couple that true poet Campion with the lumbering versifier Abraham Fraunce, author of *The Countess of Pembroke's Ivy Church*, 1591, &c.

⁴ *The seven first bookes of the Eneidos* appeared in 1558; books i.-ix. in 1562; *The Whole xii. Bookes* (completed by Thomas Twyne) in 1573.

⁵ Dyce says that the poems of Watson "more particularly alluded to here are *Amyntas*, 1585, duod., its subject the lamentation of Amyntas for the death of Phillis. Secondly, *Amyntæ Gaudia*, 1593." Peele may also be alluding to *The Tears of Fancy or Love Disdained*, 1593.

Why hie they not, unhappy in thine end, 60
Marley,¹ the Muses' darling for thy verse,
Fit to write passions for the souls below,
If any wretched souls in passion speak?
Why go not all into th' Elysian fields,
And leave this centre barren of repast,
Unless in hope Augusta will restore
The wrongs that learning bears of covetousness,
And court's disdain, the enemy to art?
 Leave, foolish lad, it mendeth not with words;
 Nor herbs nor time such remedy affords. 70

Your honour's in all humble service,

GEO. PEELE.

¹ Christopher Marlowe, who was buried 1st June 1593.

THE HONOUR OF
THE HONOURABLE ORDER OF
THE GARTER.



ABOUT the time when Vesper in the west
Gan set the evening watch, and silent Night,
Richly attended by his twinkling train,
Sent sleep and slumber to possess the world,
And fantasy to hauzen¹ idle heads ;
Under the starry² canopy of heaven
I laid me down, laden with many cares,
(My bed-fellows almost these twenty years),
Fast by the stream where 'Thame and Isis meet,
And day by day roll to salute the sea 10
For more than common service it perform'd
To Albion's queen, when foemen shipp'd for fight,
To forage England plough'd the ocean up,
And slunk into the channel that divides

¹ Embrace.

² In *England's Parnassus*, p. 333, the reading is "stately."

The Frenchmen's strond¹ fro Britain's fishy towns.
 Even at that time, all in a fragrant mead,
 In sight of that fair castle, that o'erlooks
 The forest one way, and the fertile vale
 Water'd with that renownèd river Thames,
 Old Windsor Castle, did I take my rest : 20
 When Cynthia, companion of the Night,
 With shining brand lightning² his³ ebon car,
 Whose axletree was jet enchased with stars,
 And roof with shining ravens' feathers ceil'd,
 Piercing mine eyelids as I lay along,⁴
 Awaked me through. Therewith methought I saw
 A royal glimmering light streaming aloft,
 As Titan mounted on the Lion's back
 Had clothed himself in fiery-pointed beams,
 To chase the Night, and entertain the Morn ; 30
 Yet scarce had chaunticleer rung the midnight peal,
 Or Phœbe half-way gone her journey through.
 Sleeping or waking as alone I lay,
 Mine eyes, and ears, and senses all were served
 With every object perfect in his kind :
 And, lo, a wonder to my senses all !
 For through the melting air, perfumed with sweets,
 I might discern a troop of horsemen ride,

¹ *Strond*=strand ; *fro*=from. (I have followed the Ashmole copy in Bodl. Library. Dyce gives "The Frenchmen's *strand from*." His copy differs occasionally from the Oxford copy.)

² *England's Parnassus*, p. 334, "lighting."

³ *i.e.* Night's.

⁴ *England's Parnassus*, p. 334 :

"Piercing my eyelids as I lie along."

Arm'd cap-de-pè, with shield and shivering lance ;
As in a splash,¹ or calm transparent brook, 40
We see the glistening fishes scour along ;
A number numberless, appointed well
For tournament, as if the God of War
Had held a justs in honour of his love,
Or all the sons of Saturn and of Ops
Had been in arms against Enceladus.
Therewith I heard the clarions and the shalms,
The sackbuts, and a thousand instruments
Of several kinds ; and, loudest of them all,
A trump more shrill than Triton's is at sea :² 50
The same³ Renown, precursor of the train,
Did sound,—for who rings louder than Renown ?
He mounted was upon a flying horse,
And clothed in falcon's feathers to the ground :
By his escutcheon justly might you guess
He was the herald of eternity,
And pursuivant-at-arms to mighty Jove.
I look'd to see an end of that I saw,
And still methought the train did multiply ;
And yielding clouds gave way, and men-at-arms 60
Succeed as fast, one at another's heels,
As in the vast Mediterranean sea
The rolling waves do one beget another.
Those that perfumed the air with myrrh and balm,
Dancing and singing sweetly as they went,

¹ Pool.

² *England's Parnassus*, p. 381 ("Renown"), for "is at sea" reads
"on the sea."

³ *England's Parnassus* "said."

Were naked virgins, deck'd with garlands green,
 And seem'd the Graces, for with golden chains
 They linkèd were, three lovely countenances.
 About them Cupid, as to me it seem'd,
 Lay playing on his parti-colour'd wings; 70
 And sometime on a horse as white as milk
 I saw ¹ him arm'd and mounted in the throng,
 As Love had right to march with men of war.
 Weary of looking up, I laid me down,
 Willing to rest, as sleepy souls are wont,
 When of a sudden such a noise I heard
 Of shot of ordnance pealing in mine ears,
 As twenty thousand tire ² had play'd at sea,
 Or Ætna split had belch'd her bowels forth,
 Or heaven and earth in arms thundering amain 80
 Had bent their great artillery for war,
 And weary Atlas had let fall his load,
 Enough to wake Endymion from his trance.
 Yet was the welkin clear, nor smoke nor dust
 Annoy'd mine eyes: I gazed, and, as I look'd,
 Methought this host of aery armed men
 Girt Windsor Castle round. Anon I saw,
 Under a canopy of crimson bysse,³
 Spangled with gold, and set with silver bells
 That sweetly chimed and lull'd me half a-sleep, 90
 A goodly king in robes most richly dight
 The upper like a Roman palliament,

¹ Old ed. "see." ² *i.e.* tier?

³ Fine silk.

Indeed a chaperon, for such it was ;
And looking nearer, lo, upon his leg
An ancient badge of honour I espied,
A garter brightly glistening in mine eye,
A worthy ornament ! Then I call'd to mind
What princely Edward, of that name the Third,
King Edward, for his great achievements famed,
What he began,—the Order of Saint George, 100
That at this day is honour'd through the world,
The Order of the Garter so y-clept,
A great effect grown of a slender cause,
Graced by a king, and favour'd of his feres,¹
Famed by his followers, worthy kings and queens,
That to this day are sovereigns of the same.
The manner how this matter grew at first
Was thus. The king, disposèd on a time
To revel, after he had shaken France,
(O, had he bravely held it to the last !) 110
And deck'd his lions with their flower-de-lyce,
Disposed to revel,—some say otherwise,—
Found on the ground by fortune, as he went,
A lady's garter, and ² the queen's, I trow,
Lost in a dance, and took it up himself :
It was a silken ribbon weaved of blue.
His lords and standers-by, seeing the king
Stoop for this garter, smiled, as who would say,
“ Our office that had been,” or somewhat else.
King Edward wistly looking on them all, 120

¹ Companions.

² So Dyce's copy.—Ashmole copy “ But.”

With princely hands having that garter seized,
 From harmless heart, where honour was engraved,
 Bespake in French ('a could¹ the language well,
 And rife was French those days with Englishmen ;
 They went to school to put together towns,
 And spell in French with fescues² made of pikes),
 " *Honi soit qui mal y pense,*" quoth he.
 Wherewith upon advisement, though the cause
 Were small, his pleasure and his purpose was
 T[']advance that garter, and to institute 130
 A noble order sacred to Saint George,
 And knights to make, whom he would have be term'd
 Knights of the Garter. This beginning had
 This honourable order of our time.
 Hereon I thought when I beheld the king ;
 But swifter than my thought, by that I saw,
 And words I heard or seem'd to hear at least,
 I was instructed in the circumstance,
 And found it was King Edward that did march
 In robes like those he ware when with his lords 140
 He held Saint George's royal feast on earth.
 His eldest son, surnamèd the Black Prince,—
 Though black of hue, that surname yet in France
 He wan, for terror to the Frenchmen's hearts
 His countenance was, his sword an iron scourge,—
 He on a coal-black courser mounted was,
 And in his hand a battle-axe he hent ;³

¹ Was acquainted with.

² " *i.e.* pieces of wire or stick, with which those who taught children to read pointed out the letters."—*Dyce*.

³ Held.

His beaver up ; his corselet was of steel
Varnish'd as black as jet ; his bases¹ black ;
And black fro² head to foot, yea, horse and hoof, 150
As black as night. But in a twink methought
'A changed at once his habit and his steed,
And had a garter as his father had,
Right rich and costly, with embroidery
Of pearl and gold : I could on it discern
The poesy whereof I spake of yore ;
And well I wot, since this King Edward's days,
Our kings and queens about their royal arms
Have in a garter borne this poesy.
Still as I lay I gazed, and guess'd at once 160
What was this train, and whither it did bend :
I found at last King Edward was the man,
Accompanied with kings and conquerors,
That from the spacious aery House of Fame
Set forward royally to solemnize
Th' installment of some new-created knights.
For, lo, I saw in strange accoutrements,
Like to King Edward's and the Prince of Wales',
Full four-and twenty knights, nor more nor less,
In robes with precious collars of Saint George ; 170
And garters all they had buckled with gold.
Fame, in a stole of purple set with eyes
And ears and tongues, carried a golden book :
Upon the cover this I saw engraved ;

¹ See note 5, p. 290.

² So Ashmole copy.—Dyce "from."

Pauci¹ quos æquus amavit

*Jupiter, aut ardens exivit ad æthera virtus,
Dīs geniti.*

Methought this saying could not but import
 They should be noble men of golden minds
 And great account, favour'd of prince and peers, 180
 Whose names should in that register be writ,
 Consecrate to Saint George's chosen knights.
 Herewith the golden book gan² open fair,
 And eathly³ I might read their names that next
 Went to the king: they were no common men,
 For to my seeming each one had a page
 That bare a fair escutcheon after him,
 Whereon his arms were drawn; I have forgot
 Their several coats, but well I wot their names.
 And first I saw enroll'd within this book 190
 King Edward's name; he was the sovereign.
 Their register was Fame. Renown, before
 That sounded shrill, was officer-at-arms
 And usher to the train; his office-badge
 Was a black rod whereof he took his name.
 Honour went king-at-arms, next to the knights,
 Half-arm'd, like Pallas shaped for arms and arts,
 Rich in habiliments of peace and war:
 Ancient and grave he was and sage to see.
 Near him went Time, well-pleas'd and well-content 200
 As if he joy'd t'accompany this train,

¹ Virgil, *Æn.* vi. 129.

² So Dyce.—Ashmole copy "did."

³ Easily.

And in his hand a royal standard bare,
Wherein Saint George was drawn and limn'd in gold.
Under the verge, as title to the book,
Was writ, *Knights of the Order of Saint George,*
Knights of the Garter. Edward Prince of Wales
Was first, then Henry Duke of Lancaster,
And Nicholas¹ Earl of Warwick made the third.
Captaine de Bouche was next, renown'd for arms.
Then the brave Earls of Stafford and Southampton;²
To whose successors, for his sake that lives 211
And now survives in honour of that name,
To whom my thoughts are humble and devote,
Gentle Wriothesley, Southampton's star,
I wish all fortune, that in Cynthia's eye,
Cynthia the glory of the western world,
With all the stars in her fair firmament,
Bright may he rise and shine immortally.
And³ Mortimer, a gentle trusty lord,
More loyal than that cruel Mortimer 220
That plotted Edward's death at Killingsworth,
Edward the Second, father to this king,
Whose tragic cry even now methinks I hear,
When graceless wretches murder'd him by night.
Then Lisle, and Burwash,⁴ Beauchamp, and Mahun,⁵
Grey, Courtney, and the Hollands worthy knights,

¹ "Thomas"—marginal MS. correction in Ashmole copy.

² "Salisbury"—marginal correction in Ashmole copy.

³ So Dyce.—Ashmole copy "Sir."

⁴ "Written more correctly 'Burghersh.'"—Dyce.

⁵ *i.e.* Mohun.

Fitz-simon, Wale, and Sir Hugh Wrottesley,¹
 Nele Loryng,² Chandos, Sir Miles Stapleton,
 Walter Pagannel,³ Eam,⁴ and D'Audley,⁵ last
 Was the good knight Sir Sanchet D'Abrichecourt.⁶ 230
 These names I read, for they were written fair ;
 And, as it seem'd to me, these were the first
 Created of that order by the king :
 And man by man they march'd in equipage.
 A many more there were than I could note,
 And, sooth to say, I think the book was full ;
 And in the train a number infinite,
 True knights of all the orders in the world,
 Christians and heathens, that accompanied
 This worthy king in his procession. 240
 Cæsar himself was there ; I saw him ride,
 Triúmphing in his three-and-twenty wounds,
 Because they show'd the malice of the world.
 Pompey was there, the rival of his fame,
 That died a death as base and violent.
 Leave I this theme : the mightiest that have lived
 Have fall'n, and headlong too ; in misery
 It is some comfort to have company.
 Hector of Troy, and kings ere Troy was built,
 Or Thrace was Thrace, were there : old Dardanus,

¹ So Dyce.—Old ed. " Wortesley."

² So Dyce.—Old ed. " Neale, Lording."

³ " Paveley"—marginal correction in Ashmole copy.

⁴ Ashmole copy seems to have read " Emr," which has been corrected to " Eme."

⁵ So Dyce.—Old ed. " Dandley."

⁶ So Dyce.—Old ed. " Haunchet Dambricourte."

And Ilus, and Assaracus, came along. 251
For in the House of Fame what famous man,
What prince, but hath his trophy and his place?
There Joshua, David, and great Machabee,
Last anchor-hold and stay of Jacob's race,
Did march; and Macedonian Alexander;
Victorious Charles the Great, the flower of France;
Godfrey of Bullen, whom the Christian kings
Created King of great Jerusalem;
And Arthur, glory of the western world, 260
And all his knights were in this royal train.
Jason was there, Knight of the Golden Fleece;
Knights of the Tosson,¹ and of Saint Iago,
Knights of the Rhodes, Knights of the Sepulchre,
Were there: the air was pester'd² to my thought.
Among them all a worthy man of mark,
A prince of famous memory I saw,
Henry the Eight, that led a warlike band
Of English earls, and lords, and lusty knights,
That ware the garter sacred to Saint George. 270
Who was not there? I think the court of Fame
Was naked and unpeopled, in this train
There were so many emperors, lords, and kings,
Knights errant and adventurous. In the book
That on a desk lay open before Fame,—
For in a sumptuous chariot did he ride
Of crystal, set with leaves of glittering gold,

¹ "i.e. *Toison d'or*.—Of the different orders of knighthood mentioned here, the reader will find a particular account in Segar's *Honour*, &c., pp. 79, 94, 95, 106."—*Dyce*.

² Crowded.

And fair tralucent stones, that over all
 It did reflect,—within that glorious book
 I saw a name rejoicèd me to see, 280
 Francis of Bedford ; I could read it plain,
 And glad I was that in that precious book
 That name I found, for now, methought, I said,
 Here virtue doth outlive th' arrest of death ;
 For dead is Bedford, virtuous and renown'd
 For arms, for honour, and religious love,
 And yet alive his name in Fame's records,
 That held this garter dear, and ware it well.
 Some worthy wight let blazon his deserts :
 Only a tale I thought on by the way, 290
 As I observed his honourable name.
 I heard it was his chance, o'erta'en with sleep,
 To take a nap near to a farmer's lodge,
 Trusted a little with himself belike :
 This agèd earl, in his apparel plain,
 Wrapt in his russet cloak, lay down to rest,
 His badge of honour buckled to his leg,
 Bare and unhid. There came a pilfering swad,¹
 And would have prey'd upon this ornament,
 And say'd² t' unbuckle it, thinking him asleep : 300
 The noble gentleman,³ feeling what he meant,
 " Hold, foolish lad," quoth he, " a better prey ;
 This garter is not fit for every leg,
 And I account it better than my purse."

¹ Clown.

² Assay'd.

³ So Dyce.—Ashmole copy "gentle."

The varlet ran away ; the earl awaked,
 And told his friends, and smiling said withal,
 " 'A would not, had 'a understood the French
 Writ on my garter, dared t' have stoln the same."
 This tale I thought upon, told me for truth,
 The rather for it praised the poesy, 310
 Right grave and honourable, that importeth much ;
 " *Ill be to him,*" it saith, " *that evil thinks.*"
 O sacred loyalty, in purest hearts
 Thou build'st thy bower ! thy weeds of spotless white,
 Like those that stood for Rome's great offices,
 Make thee renown'd, glorious in innocency.
 Why stick I here ? The train cast in a ring
 About the castle, making melody,
 Under the glorious spreading wings of Fame,
 I saw a virgin queen, attired in white, 320
 Leading with her a sort¹ of goodly knights,
 With garters and with collars of Saint George :
 " *Elizabeth*" on a compartiment
 Of gold in bysse² was writ, and hung askew
 Upon her head, under an imperial crown.
 She was the sovereign of the knights she led :
 Her face, methought, I knew, as if the same,
 The same great empress that we here enjoy,
 Had climb'd the clouds, and been in person there ;
 To whom the earth, the sea, and elements 330
 Auspicious are. A many that I knew,

¹ Company.

² " 'Byce a colour, *azur.*' Palsgrave's *Lesclar. de la Lang Fran.*, 1530, fol. xx. (Table of Subst.)"—*Dyce.*

Knighted in my remembrance, I beheld,
 And all their names were in that register ;
 And yet I might perceive some so set down,
 That, howsoe'er it hapt I cannot tell,
 The carl Oblivion stoln from Lethe's lake,
 Or Envy stept from out the deep Avern,
 Had razed, or blemish'd, or obs[c]ured at least.
 What have those fiends to do in Fame's fair court ?
 Yet in the House of Fame, and courts of kings, 340
 Envy will bite, or snarl and bark at least,
 As dogs against the moon that yelp in vain :
 Say "*Frustra*" to those curs, and shake thy coat.
 And all the kings, since that King Edward's days,
 Were with their knights and companies in that train.
 When all were whist,¹ King Edward thus bespake :
 " Hail, Windsor ! where I sometimes took delight
 To hawk, and hunt, and back the proudest horse,
 And where in princely pleasure I reposed
 In my return from France,"—a little sigh 350
 I heard him fetch withal ; his reason why
 I cannot guess ; I think it was for this,
 That England had given o'er their traffic there,—
 " And twenty times hail, Windsor !" quoth the king,
 " Where I have stall'd so many hardy knights,
 And tournaments and royal justs perform'd :
 Behold, in honour of mine ancient throne,
 In honour of fair England, and Saint George,
 To whom this Order of the Garter first

¹ Silent.

I sacred held ; in honour of my knights, 360
Before this day created and install'd,
But specially in honour of those five
That at this day this honour have received
Under Elizabeth, England's great sovereign,—
Northumberland and Worcester, noble earls,
Borough and Sheffield, lords of lively hope,
And honourable old Knowles famed for his sons,
And for his service gracious and renown'd ;
Lo, from the House of Fame, with princely trains
Accompanied, and kings, and conquerors, 370
And knights of proof, loyal and valourous,
I re-salute thee here, and gratulate
To those new knights, created by a queen
Peerless for wisdom and for majesty,
The honour of the Garter : may they long
Wear them as notes of true nobility
And virtue's ornaments ! Young Northumberland,
Mounted on Fortune's wheel, by virtue's aim
Become thy badge, as it becometh thee,
That Europe's eyes thy worthiness may see. 380
And, Worcester, what pure honour hath put on
With chaste and spotless hands, in honour wear ;
Answer the noblest of thine ancestry,
In deeds to fame and virtue consecrate.
Borough, brought up in learning and in arms,
Patron of music and of chivalry,
Brandish thy sword in right, and spend thy wits
In commonwealth affairs : it shall become
Thy forwardness to follow virtue's cause,

And great designs of noble consequence. 390
 And, Sheffield, shape thy course no otherwise
 Than loyalty, the load-star of renown,
 Directs ; that, as thine ancestors have done,
 Thine earthly race in honour thou mayst run.
 To thee, old man," with kindness quoth the king,
 "That reap'st this honour in thy waning age,
 See what a trophy Queen Elizabeth
 Prepares before thy hearse : long mayst thou live,
 And die in fame, that hast well near achieved
 The noble Norris' honour in thy sons, 400
 Thrice noble lord, as happy for his few,
 As was the King of Troy for many more."
 With that he ceased, and to the foremost earl,—
 For why¹ methought I saw² them every man,
 Stall'd in their places and their ornaments,—
 "Percy," quoth he, "thou and thy lordly peers,
 Your names are in this register of Fame,
 Written in leaves and characters of gold :
 So live, as with a many more you may
 Survive and triumph in eternity, 410
 Out of Oblivion's reach or Envy's shot ;
 And that your names immortally may shine
 In these records, not earthly, but divine."
 Then shalms and sackbuts sounded in the air,
 But shrill'st of all, the trumpet of Renown ;
 And by and by a loud retraite he rung.
 The train retired, as swift as stars don shoot,

¹ "For why"—because.

² So Dyce.—Old ed. "see."

From whence they came, and day began to break ;
And with the noise and thunder in the sky,
When Fame's great double-doors fell to and shut, 420
And this triumphant train was vanish'd quite,
The gaudy Morn out of her golden sleep
Awaked, and little birds uncaged gan sing
To welcome home the bridegroom of the sea.

EPILOGUS.

Wherewith I roused, recounting what I saw :
And then thought I ; were it as once it was,
But long ago, when learning was in price,
And poesy with princes gracious, .
I would adventure to set down my dream,
In honour of these new-advancèd lords, 430
Saint George's knights. I was encouragèd,
And did as I have done ; which humbly here
I yield, as firstlings of my scholar's crop,
Consecrated¹ purely to your noble name,
To gratulate to you this honour's height,
As little boys with flinging up their caps
Congratulate great kings and conquerors.
Take it in gree,² fair lord. *Procul hinc turba invidiosa :*
Stirps rudis urtica est, stirps generosa rosa.

G. P.

¹ "Qy. 'Consecrate'?"—*Dyce*.

² "Take in gree"—take in good part.

ANGLORUM FERIÆ, ENGLAND'S
HOLIDAYS.

Anglorum Feriæ, Englandes Hollydayes, celebrated the 17th of Novemb. last, 1595, beginninge happily the 38 yeare of the raigne of our soveraigne ladie Queene Elizabeth. By George Peele *Mr of Arte in Oxforde*,—was first printed, for private circulation, by a Mr. Fitch, of Ipswich, in an undated 4to (circ. 1830), from a MS. in his possession. This MS. is now in the British Museum. Fitch, who made his transcript *verbatim et literatim*, must have freely used chemicals in order to decipher some passages—which are now hopelessly obliterated.

TO

THE RIGHT HONOURABLE AND WORTHY LADY,

KATHERINE, COUNTESS OF HUNTINGTON.

ANGLORUM FERIÆ.



DESCEND, ye sacred daughters of King Jove :
Apollo, spread thy sparkling wings to mount,
And try some lightsome sweet Castalian springs
That warble to their silver-winding waves,
Making soft music in their gentle glide :
Clio, the sagest of these Sisters Nine,
Conduct thy learnèd company to court,
Eliza's court, Astræa's earthly heaven ;
There take survey of England's emperess,
And in her praise tune your heroic songs : 10
Write, write, you chroniclers of time and fame
That keep Remembrance' golden register,
And recommend to time's eternity
Her honour's height and wonders of her age,
Wonders of her that reason's reach transcend,
Such wonders as have set the world at gaze ;
Write, write, you chroniclers of time and fame,
Elizabeth by miracles preserved
From perils imminent and infinite :
Clio, proclaim with golden trump and pen 20

Her happy days, England's high holidays ;
 O'er Europe's bounds take wing, and make thy flight
 Through melting air, from where the rising sun
 Gallops the zodiac in his fiery wain,
 Even to the brink where Thetis in her bower
 Of pumey ¹ and tralucent pebble-stones
 Receives the weary bridegroom of the sea,
 Beyond Grand Cair, by Nilus' slimy bank,
 Over the wild and sandy Afric plains,
 Along the frozen shore of Tanais, 30
 Whose icy crust Apollo cannot thaw ;
 Even there and round about this earthly ball
 Proclaim the day of England's happiness,
 The days of peace, the days of quietness,
 And let her gladsome birth-day be the first,
 Her day of birth, beginning of our bliss ;
 Set down the day in characters of gold,
 And mark it with a stone as white as milk,
 That cheerful sunny day. Wear eglantine,
 And wreaths of roses red and white put on 40
 In honour of that day, you lovely nymphs,
 And pæans sing and sweet melodious songs ;
 Along the chalky cliffs of Albion
 Lead England's lovely shepherds in a dance
 O'er hill and dale, and downs, and daisy-plots,
 And be that day England's high holiday ;
 And holidays and high days be they all,
 High holidays, days, minutes, months, and hours,

¹ Pumice.

That multiply the number of her years ;
Years that for us beget this golden age, 50
Wherein we live in safety under her,
Wherein she reigns in honour over us :
So may she long and ever may she so,
Untouch'd of traitorous hand or treacherous foe !

Her birth-day being celebrated thus,
Clio, record how she hath been preserved,
Even in the gates of death and from her youth,
To govern England in the ways of truth ;
Record heaven's goodness to this gracious queen,
Whose virtue's peer what age hath ever seen ? 60

To pass the story of her younger days,
And stormy tempest happily o'erblown,
Wherein by mercy and by miracle
She was rescúed for England's happiness,
And comfort of the long-afflicted flock
That stray'd like scatter'd sheep scared from the
fold ;

To slip remembrance of those careful days,
Days full of danger, happy days withal,
Days of her preservation and defence ;
Behold the happiest day, the holiday 70
That young and old and all don¹ celebrate,
The day of joy, the day of jollity !
The best of all the days that we have seen
Was wherein she was crownèd England's Queen,
Elizabeth, anointed of the Highest

¹ Doen, do.

To sit upon her kingly father's seat,
 And wear in honour England's diadem,
 To sway that massy sceptre and that sword
 That aw'd the world in his triumphant hand,
 And now in her's commands the enemy, 80
 And with dishonour drives the daring foe
 Back to his den, tired with successless arms,
 Wearied with wars by land and wrack by sea.
 Muses and Graces, gods and goddesses,
 Adorn, adore, and celebrate this day.
 The meanest with the mightiest may in this
 Express his love ; for loyalty alike
 Blazons affection's force in lord and lown.

In honour of this happy day, behold
 How high and low, the young and old in years, 90
 England, hath put a face of gladness on,
 And court and country carol in her praise,
 And in her honour tune a thousand lays !

With just return of this triumphant day,
 And prosperous revolution of the same,
 Auspiciously beginning many years
 And golden days and infinite to come,
 Passing in number and in happiness
 The best that ever earthly prince enjoy'd
 By suffrance of the highest King of kings ; 100
 Behold, in honour of this holiday,
 What pæans loud triumphant London sings,
 What holy tunes and sacrifice of thanks
 England's metropolis as incense sends !
 And in the sound of cymbals, trumps, and shalms,

In honour of his noble mistress' name,
To whom ¹ his life he owes and offers up,
Lo, London's shepherd, guardian of his flock,
Praiseth the Mighty One of Israel,
And with the strings of his unfeignèd heart 110
Tunes his true joy for all those days of peace,
Those quiet days that Englishmen enjoy
Under our queen, fair queen of Brute's New Troy!

With whom in sympathy and sweet accord
All loyal subjects join, and hearts and hands
Lift up to Heaven's high throne, and sacrifice
Of praises and of hearty prayers send ;
Thanksgiving for our blessings and the grace,
The gracious blessings on that day pour'd down
On England's head ; that day whereon this queen 120
Inaugur'd was and holily install'd,
Anointed of the highest King of kings,
In her hereditary royal right
Successively to sit enthronizèd.
And in this general plaudit and applause,
And celebration of this joyful day,
Wherein pale Envy, vanquish'd long ago,
Gave way to Virtue's great deserts in her,
And wounded with remembrance of her name,
Made hence amain to murmur that abroad 130
He durst not openly disgorge at home,
In his own nest filed with so foul a bird,
And breathe his discontentments over sea

¹ For "whom" MS. reads "whō he."

Among those erring fugitives that pine
 At England's prosperous peace, and nothing more
 Do thirst than alteration of the state,
 And nothing less than our good queen affect ;
 A number of unnatural Englishmen,
 That curse the day so happy held of us,
 Whose base revolt from their allegiance due 140
 To prince and country makes them infamous,
 Condemn'd among the Turks and Infidels,
 False architects of those foul practices
 That end in their dishonour and their shame,
 Those bloody stratagems, those traitorous trains,
 And cruel siege they lay unto her life,
 Precious in sight of heaven and dear to us,
 Her loving and her loyal subjects all,
 Whom Jacob's God hath many ways preserved,
 Yea, even betwixt the bridge and water's brink, 150
 Saving her as by miracle in the fall
 From Pharaoh's rod and from the sword of Saul :—
 Lo, in this triumph that true subjects make,
 Envied of none but enemies of the truth,
 Her enemies, that serves the living Lord
 And puts in him her confidence and trust,
 Thou, sacred Muse of History, describe,
 That all may see how well she is beloved,
 What troop of loyal English knights in arms,
 Right richly mounted and appointed all, 160
 In shining arms accoutred for the war,
 Small number of a number numberless,
 Held justs in honour of her holiday,

Ready to do their duties and devoir
Against the mightiest enemy she hath,
Under what clime soe'er his colours wave,
And with keen sword and battle-axe in hand
To wound his crest, whatever foe he be
That any way in her dishonour braves.

Among this stirring company of knights, 170
That at the tilt in fair habiliments
Gan show themselves, renownèd Cumberland,
Knight of the Crown, in gilded armour dight,
Mounted at Queen Elizabeth's approach,
Inflamed with honour's fire, and left his hold
Kept by a dragon, laden with fair spoils :
And there his duty done, and large device
Made by his page known to her majesty,
Whose gracious eye reflecting on this earl
Was like Prometheus' life-infusing fire, 180
Behold, he stands impatient of delay,
Awaiting there his friendly foe's approach !
Daring he stands, true knight and challenger,
And hardly brooks the time of their address
That shortly came in duty all devote,
To solace with their martial exercise
Their princely mistress, to whose worthiness
That day's device and days of all their lives
Right humbly were and purely dedicate.

The first that led, in cheerful colours clad, 190
In innocent white and fair carnation,
Was he whose wisdom in his younger years
And love to arms make him so far renown'd,

The noble earl of Essex and of Ewe,
 His mute approach and action of his mutes
 Said that he was solicited diversely ;
 One way to follow war and war's designs,—
 And well he may, for skill he can full well
 Of war's adventures, 'larms, and stratagems ;—
 Another way t' apply him to the care 200
 Of commonweal-affairs, and show the way
 To help to underbear with grave advice
 The weighty beam whereon the state depends :
 Well may he this way or the other take,
 And both shall his nobility become ;
 The gravity and greatness of the one
 Shall beautify the other's worthiness ;
 His senate-robcs shall beautify his arms,
 His chivalry nobilitate his name.

Then Sussex, seated on his champing steed, 210
 Dreadful to see, and in sad tawny dight,
 Came in, as if some angry man of war
 Had charged his lance and put himself in arms,
 Under an eben-tree or blasted yew :
 Such show'd his plume, or like in my conceit
 To ravens' feathers by the moon's reflex,
 Shining where night by day doth take repose.
 Mars in his wrath sitting upon his drum,
 Devising tragedies, strikes no greater fear
 Into the eyes and hearts of earthly men, 220
 Than did methought this champion in his way ;
 Nor in his doings ever man-at-arms
 So young of years more forward than this earl :

So prone, so puissant, and successful still
In all his courses was this warlike knight.

Then Bedford and Southampton made up five,

Five valiant English earls. Southampton ran

As Bevis of Southampton, that good knight,

Had justed in the honour of the day ;

And certes Bevis was a mighty man,

230

Valiant in arms, gentle and debonair ;

And such was young Wriothesley, that came

As if in duty to his sovereign

And honour's race for all that he had done,

He would be of the noblest over-run.¹

Like to himself and to his ancestors,

Ran Bedford, to express his readiness,

His love to arms, his loyalty to her

Whose burning eyeballs did retain the heat

That kindled honour's fire at their hearts ;

240

Bravely ran Bedford, and his staves he brake

Right happily for his high mistress' sake.

Compton² of Compton came in shining arms,

Well mounted and appointed for the field,

A gallant lord ; richly array'd was he,

He and his train. Clio, recount his fame ;

Record with me his love to learning's lore,

And valiant doings on this holiday :

¹ "Qy.

'He would not of the noblest be o'er-run'?'—*Dyce*.

² See note 2, p. 290.

Short will I be in process of his praise ;
 Courageously he ran, and with the best 250
 From forth the field bare honour on his crest.

Carew was well acquainted with the place,
 And to the tilt proudly he made approach ;
 His steed well-taught, himself fitted in all,
 Fell to his noble exercise of arms,
 And on his courser gan himself advance,
 Whose neighs and plays were princely to behold :
 Remembrance of this day revived this knight ;
 His turn he takes, and at the trumpet's sound
 Breaks at the head with many a lofty bound. 260

In bases¹ and caparisons of cost
 Came three redoubted knights and men-at-arms,
 Old Knowles² his offspring, gallant cavaliers ;
 And such they show'd as were King Arthur's knights
 He whilom used to feast at Camelot,
 Or three of great King Priam's valiant sons
 Had left Elysium and the fields of Mars
 To celebrate Eliza's holiday :
 They ran as if three Hectors had made way
 To meet Achilles, Ajax, Diomedè. 270
 Palm had the eldest branching of his crest :
 'Tis hard to say which brother did the best.
 Like Venus' son in Mars his armour clad,

¹ See note 5, p. 290.

² There is more praise of Sir Francis Knowles and his three sons in *Polyhymnia*. Naunton says of the sons that they were "brave men in their times and places, but they were of the court and carpet and not by the genius of the camp."

Beset with glorious globes and golden flames,
Came Dudley in ; nor shall it me become
To dive into the depth of his device ;
Rich in his thoughts and valiant in his deeds,
No whit dishonour'd by his fainting horse,
That cowardlike would have held his master back
From honour's goal,—ill-natured and ill-taught, 280
To fail him foully in so great a presence.

But as an archer with a bended bow
The farther from the mark he draws his shaft,
The farther flies it and with greater force
Wounds earth and air ; so did it fare in this ;
This lusty runner, thus restrain'd at first,
Now all inflamed, soon having changed his steed,
And view'd the person of his princely mistress,
Whose radiant beams have ¹ power to set on fire
The icy ridge of snowy Rhodope, 290
Flies like a bullet from a cannon's mouth.
His armèd horse made dreadful harmony,
Grating against the rails : so valiantly
He justed, that unjust it were in me
Not to admire young Dudley's chivalry.

Young Howard, ramping lion-like, came on,
Anchor of Howard's honourable house,
His noble father's hope, his mother's joy.
Loyal and lovely was this fair young knight,
Gracious in his beginnings at the tilt, 300
Pleasing to her to whom he did present

¹ So Dyce.—MS. "and."

His person and the service of that day,
 And all the days and minutes of his life :
 Bravely he bare him in his mistress' eye,
 And brake¹ his staves and let the shivers fly.

Drury in flames of gold embroider'd fair,
 Inflamed with love of virtue and of arms,
 Came to the tilt like Phœbus,
 And like a warrior there demean'd himself ;
 Heaven's vault, earth's centre sounded of his force : 310
 So well he ran as they that do him right,
 For field and court held him a worthy knight.

Among these runners that in virtue's race
 Contended, rivals of each other's praise,
 Nowell and Needham, gentlemen of name,
 Came mounted and appointed gallantly ;
 Both nobly minded, as became them well,
 Resolved to run in honour of the day.

L'escu d'amour, the arms of loyalty,
 Lodged Skydmore in his heart ; and on he came, 320
 And well and worthily demean'd himself
 In that day's service : short and plain to be,
 Nor lord nor knight more forward than was he.

Then Ratcliffe, Reynolds, Blount, and Carey came,
 In all accoutrements fitting gentlemen ;
 Well mounted and appointed every man ;
 And gallantly and worthily they ran.

Long may they run in honour of the day !
 Long may she live to do them honour's right,

¹ So Dyce.—MS. "breakes."

To grace their sports and them as she hath done, 330
England's Astræa, Albion's shining sun !
And may she shine in beauty fresh and sheen
Hundreds of years, our thrice-renownèd queen !
Write, Clio, write ; write, and record her story,
Dear in heaven's eye, her court and country's glory.

MISCELLANEOUS POEMS.

MISCELLANEOUS POEMS.



LINES ADDRESSED TO THOMAS WATSON,

Prefixed to *The EKATOMHAIΘIA, or Passionate Centurie
of Love*, n.d. [1582].

IF graver heads shall count it overlight
To treat of love, say thou to them, a stain
Is incident unto the finest dye :
And yet no stain at all it is for thee,
These lays of love, as mirth to melancholy,
To follow fast thy sad *Antigone* ;¹
Which may bear out a broader work than this,
Compiled with judgment, order, and with art ;
And shroud thee under shadow of his wings,
Whose gentle heart, and head with learning fraught,²
Shall yield thee gracious favour and defence.

¹ *Sophoclis Antigone. Interprete Thoma Watsono J. U. studioso.*
. . . 1581. 4to.

² Fraught.

THE PRAISE OF CHASTITY,

WHEREIN IS SET FORTH, BY WAY OF COMPARISON, HOW GREAT
IS THE CONQUEST OVER OUR AFFECTIONS.

From *The Phanix Nest*, 1593.

THE noble Romans whilom wonted were,
For triumph of their conquer'd enemies,
The wreaths of laurel and of palm to wear,
In honour of their famous victories ;

And so, in robes of gold and purple dight,
Like bodies shrined in seats of ivory,
Their names renown'd for happiness in fight,
They bear the guerdon of their chivalry.

The valiant Greeks for sack of Priam's town,
A work of manhood match'd with policy, 10
Have fill'd the world with books of their renown,
As much as erst the Roman empery.

The Phrygian knights that in the House of Fame
Have shining arms of endless memory,
By hot and fierce repulse did win the same,
Though Helen's rape hurt Paris' progeny.¹

Thus strength hath guerdon by the world's award ;
So praise we birth and high nobility :
If, then, the mind and body reap reward
For nature's dower, conferrèd liberally, 20

¹ Race.

Press, then, for praise unto the highest room,
That art the highest of the gifts of heaven,
More beautiful by wisdom's sacred doom
Than Sol himself amid the Planets Seven ;

Queen of content and temperate desires,
Choice nurse of health, thy name hight Chastity ;
A sovereign power to quench such climbing fires
As choke the mind with smoke of infamy ;

Champion-at-arms, re'ncounter with thy foe,
An enemy foul and fearful to behold : 30
If, then, stout captains have been honour'd so,
Their names in books of memory enroll'd

For puissant strength,—ye Roman peers, retire,
And, Greeks, give ground ; more honour there is won,
With chaste rebukes to temper thy desire,
Than glory gain'd the world to over-run ;

Than fierce Achilles got by Hector's spoil ;
Than erst the mighty Prince of Macedon,
King Philip's imp,¹ that put his foes to foil
And wish'd more worlds to hold him play than one. 40

Believe me, to contend 'gainst armies royal,
To tame wild panthers but by strength of hand,
To praise ² the triumph, not so special,
As ticing pleasure's charms for to withstand ;

¹ Offspring.

² Unintelligible.—Qy. "raise"?

And, for me list compare with men of war,
 For honour of the field, I dare maintain,
 This victory exceedeth that as far
 As Phœbus' chariot Vulcan's forge doth stain :¹

Both noble, and triumphant in their kinds,
 And matter worthy Queen Remembrance' pen ; 50
 But that that tangles both our thoughts and minds,
 To master that, is more than over men

To make thy triumph ; sith to strength alone
 Of body it belongs, to bruise or wound ;
 But raging thoughts to quell, or few or none,
 Save Virtue's imps, are able champions found ;

Of those whom Jove hath loved ; or noble of birth :
 So strong Alcides, Jove's unconquer'd son,
 Did lift Achelous' body from the earth,
 To show what deeds by Virtue's strength are done ; 60

So him he foil'd ; and put to sudden flight,
 By aim of wit, the foul Stymphalides :
 And while we say, he master'd men by might,
 Behold, in person of this Hercules,

It liketh me to figure Chastity ;
 His labour like that foul unclean desire
 That, under guide of tickling fantasy,
 Would mar the mind through pleasure's scorching fire.

¹ Outshine, excel.

And who hath seen a fair alluring face,
 A lusty girl, y-clad in quaint array, 70
 Whose dainty hand makes music with her lace,
 And tempts thy thoughts, and steals thy sense away ;
 Whose ticing hair, like nets of golden wire,
 Enchain[s] thy heart ; whose gait and voice divine
 In flame thy blood, and kindle thy desire ;
 Whose features rape and dazzle human eyne ;
 Who hath beheld fair Venus in her pride
 Of nakedness, all alabaster white,
 In ivory bed, straight laid by Mars his side,
 And hath not been enchanted with the sight ; 80
 To wish to dally, and to offer game,
 To coy, to court, *et cætera* to do ;
 (Forgive me, Chasteness, if in terms of shame,
 To thy renown, I paint what longs thereto ;)
 Who hath not lived, and yet hath seen, I say,
 That might offend chaste hearers to endure ;
 Who hath been halèd on to touch and play,
 And yet not stoop'd to pleasure's wanton lure ;
 Crown him with laurel for his victory,
 Clad him in purple and in scarlet dye, 90
 Enroll his name in books of memory,
 Ne let the honour of his conquest die ;
 More royal in his triumph than the man
 Whom tigers drew in coach of burnish'd gold,
 In whom the Roman monarchy began,
 Whose works of worth no wit hath erst controll'd :

Elysium be his walk, high heaven his shrine,
 His drink sweet nectar, and ambrosia,
 The food that makes immortal and divine,
 Be his to taste, to make him live for aye ; 100

And that I may, in brief, describe his due,
 What lasting honour Virtue's guerdon is,
 So much and more his just desert pursue,
 Sith his desert awards it to be his.

L'ENVOY.

To thee, in honour of whose government
 Entitled is this *Praise of Chastity*,
 My gentle friend, these hasty lines are meant :
 So flowereth Virtue like the laurel-tree,
 Immortal green, that every eye may see ;
 And well was Daphne turn'd into the bay, 110
 Whose chasteness triumphs, grows, and lives for aye.

CUPID'S ARROWS.¹

From *England's Parnassus*, 1600 (p. 177, under the head *Love*).

AT Venus' entreaty for Cupid her son,
 These arrows by Vulcan were cunningly done.
 The first is Love, as here you may behold,
 His feathers, head, and body, are of gold :

¹ This piece and the next are from the lost pastoral play, *The Hunting of Cupid*.

The second shaft is Hate, a foe to love,
And bitter are his torments for to prove :
The third is Hope, from whence our comfort springs ;
His feathers [they] are pull'd from Fortune's wings :
Fourth Jealousy in basest minds doth dwell ;
His metal Vulcan's Cyclops sent from hell.

CORIDON AND MELAMPUS' SONG.

From *England's Helicon*, 1600.

Cor. Melampus, when will love be void of fears ?

Mel. When jealousy hath neither eyes nor ears.

Cor. Melampus, when will love be thoroughly
shrieved ?

Mel. When it is hard to speak and not believed.

Cor. Melampus, when is love most malcontent ?

Mel. When lovers range and bear their bows un-
bent.

Cor. Melampus, tell me when love takes least harm ?

Mel. When swains' sweet pipes are puff'd and trulls
are warm.

Cor. Melampus, tell me when is love best fed ?

Mel. When it has suck'd the sweet that ease hath
bred.

Cor. Melampus, when is time in love ill-spent ?

Mel. When it earns meed and yet receives no rent.

Cor. Melampus, when is time well-spent in love ?

Mel. When deeds win meed and words love-works do
prove.

THE HUNTING OF CUPID.

BY GEORGE PEELE OF OXFORD, PASTORAL.

Fragments of *The Hunting of Cupid* from a MS. commonplace-book by WILLIAM DRUMMOND of Hawthornden, belonging to the Society of Scottish Antiquaries. (A facsimile of a portion is here given.)

ON the snowy brows of Albion. Sweet woods, sweet running brooks, that chide in a pleasant tune and make quiet murmur, laving¹ the lilies, mints, and waterflowers in their gentle glide. Making her face the mark of his wondering eyes, and his eyes the messengers of his woundit heart. Like a candle keepeth but a little room, yet blazeth round about. Heardgroom with his strawberry lass. Some with his sweetheart making false position, putting a short syllable where a long one should be.² Some a false supposition. To celebrate mistress holiday in idleness.

What³ thing is love for (well I wot) love is a thing.
 It is a prick, it is a sting,
 It is a pretty, pretty thing;
 It is a fire, it is a coal
 Whose flame creeps in at every hole;

¹ MS. "leaving."

² I suppose Drummond is censuring some metrical irregularities.

³ This song (signed "G. Peele") is found, with some variations, in *Rawlinson MS. Poet.* 85, fol. 13. The first six lines also occur in the old play, *The Wisdom of Dr. Dodypoll*, 1600 (reprinted in vol. iii. of my *Collection of Old English Plays*, 1st series).

I was advised to examine the specimens July

4th - which July 10th or 12th

and the first pair exposed

were of a Great White Owl

and from the light to which I put

the bird it was found to be

white. The white owl has a red

June 11th & 12th and 13th

And as¹ my wit doth best devise,
 Love's dwelling is in ladies' eyes :
 From² whence do glance love's piercing darts,
 That make such holes into our hearts ;
 And all the world herein accord
 Love is a great and mighty lord,
 And when he list to mount so high,
 With Venus he in heaven doth lie,
 And ever more hath been a god
 Since Mars and she played even and odd.—
 Kiss a little and use not.

Q. Why, kissing's good. *R.* To stir your blood, to
 make you well disposed to play : *ab aquilone omne malum :*
 would have moved tears in wrath³ herself : wrinkled
 sorrow sate in furrows of a fair face : famous for his
 ill-fortune : you that think there is no heaven but
 on earth : you that suck poison instead of honey :
 he exceedeth fiends in cruelty, and fortune in uncon-
 stancy.

Set up Cynthia by day, and Citherea by night.
 She strakid his head and missed his horns.
 Who bluntly bespake her,
 "Grew this sweet rose in this sour stalk ?"

¹ Drummond MS. "is."

² Rawlinson MS. reads—

" From whence he shoots his dainty darts
 Into the lusty gallants hearts ;
 And ever since was call'd a god
 That Mars with Venus play'd even and odd."

³ MS. "vreath."

Cupid's Arrows. At Venus' entreaty¹ for Cupid her son,

These arrows by Vulcan are cunningly done :
 The first is love, the second shaft is hate,
 But this is hope from whence sweet comfort springs ;
 This jealousy in basest minds doth dwell,
 His metal Vulcan's Cyclops fetched from hell.—
 A smacking kiss that waked me with the din.

Know good and eschew it, praise chasteness and follow
 lustful love like the old [*one or two words illegible here*].
 All quickly come home by weeping cross.
 Highest imperial orb and throne of the thunder.

Et non moricris inultus. Shelter and shade
 Holdeth them faster than Vulcan's fine wires kept
 Mars.

A song to be sung for a wager, a dish of damsons new
 gathered off the trees.

Melampus, when will love be void of fears ?
 When jealousy hath neither eyes nor ears.
 Melampus, tell me when is love best fed ?
 When it hath sucke[d] the sweet that ease hath bred.

Liquorice as sweet to him as liquorice. *Cor sapit et*
 [*some words illegible here*]: a hot liver must be in a lover.
 To commend anything is the Italian way of craving.
 My heart is like a point of geometry indivisible, and
 where it goes it goes all.

Hard heart that did thy reed (poor shepherd) brake,
 Thy reed that was the trumpet of thy wit,

¹ MS. "entreate."

Yet, though unworthy, sound thy phœnix' praise,
 And with this slender pipe her glory raise.
 Cupid, enraged to see a thousand boys
 As fair as he sit shooting in her eyes,
 Fell down, and she
 Plucked all his plumes and made herself a fan,
 Swearing him her true little serving man.
 Muse choose :
 My mistress feeds the air, air feeds not her,
 Light of the light she is, delight supreme.
 Yet so far from the lightness of her sex,
 For she is the bird whose name doth end in X.
 Not clouds cast from the spongy element,
 Nor darkness shot from Orcus' pitchy eyes,
 Yet both her shines veiled with her arch beauties.
 Her words such quickening odours cast
 As raise the sick and make the soundest think
 Air is not wholesome, till her walk be past,
 More than the fountains till the unicorns¹ drink.
 A thousand echoes wait² upon her voice.

Cupid. Those milky mounts he every morning haunts,
 Where to their drink his mother's doves he calls.
 In my younger days when my wits ran a wool
 gathering.
 Some pretty lie he coined.

¹ "For his horn being put into the water, driveth away the poyson, that he may drink without harm, if any venomous Beast shall drink therein before him."—Topsell, *Hist. of Four-footed Beasts*, p. 555, ed. 1658.

² MS. "vat."

A MERRY BALLET OF THE HAWTHORN-
TREE.¹

TO BE SUNG AFTER DONKIN DARGESON.²

(From a Manuscript in the Cottonian Library, Vesp. A. xxv.
ff. 163-4.)

IT was a maid of my country,
As she came by the hawthorn-tree,
As full of flowers as might be seen,
She marvell'd to see the tree so green.

At last she askèd of this tree,
"How came this freshness unto thee,
And every branch so fair and clean?
I marvel that you grow so green."

The tree made answer by and by,
"I have good cause to grow triumphantly;
The sweetest dew that ever be seen
Doth fall on me to keep me green."

"Yea," quoth the maid, "but where you grow,
You stand at hand for every blow,
Of every man for to be seen:
I marvel that you grow so green."

¹ First printed in Ritson's *Ancient Songs*, 1790. In the MS. the name "G. Peele" is subscribed—in a seventeenth century hand. Ritson does not mention that Peele's name is appended. Whether Peele wrote the ballet is, as Dyce remarks, very doubtful.

² Many old songs are directed to be sung to the tune of Dargeson or Donkin Dargeson, but nobody now knows what the tune was.

“Though many one take flowers fro me,
And many a branch out of my tree,
I have such store they will not be seen,
For more and more my twigs grow green.”

“But how and they chance to cut thee down,
And carry thy branches into the town?
Then will they never no more be seen,
To grow again so fresh and green.”

“Though that you do, it is no boot;
Although they cut me to the root,
Next year again I will be seen
To bud my branches fresh and green.

“And you, fair maid, can not do so,
For if you let your maidhood¹ go,
Then will it never no more be seen,
As I with my branches can grow green.”

The maid with that began to blush,
And turn'd her from the hawthorn-bush;
She thought herself so fair and clean,
Her beauty still would ever grow green.

When that she heard this marvellous doubt,
She wander'd still then all about,
Suspecting still what she would ween,
Her maidhead² lost would never be seen.

¹ The MS. gives { “maidhode goe
virginiti go.”

² So MS.—Dyce “maidhood.”

With many a sigh she went her way,
To see how she made herself so gay,
To walk, to see, and to be seen,
And so outfaced the hawthorn green.

Besides all that, it put her in fear,
To talk with company any where,
For fear to lose the thing that should be seen
To grow as were the hawthorn green.

But after this never I could hear
Of this fair maiden any where,
That ever she was in forest seen,
To talk again with¹ the hawthorn green.

¹ MS. "of."

MERRY CONCEITED JESTS OF
GEORGE PEELE.

Merrie conceited Iests: of George Peele Gentleman, sometimes a Student in Oxford. Wherein is shewed the course of his life, how he liued: a man very well knowne in the Citie of London, and elsewhere.

*Buy, reade, and iudge,
The price doe not grudge:
It will doe thee more pleasure,
Then twice so much treasure.*

London, Printed by G. P. for F. Faulkner, and are to be sold at his Shop in Southwarke, neere Saint Margarets Hill. 1627. 4to.

Concerning these merry jests see *Introduction*. The earliest edition known is dated 1607. Other editions appeared in 1626, 1627, 1657, and 1671. There is also an old undated edition.

In Stationers' Registers, 14th December 1605 (Arber III. 308), is the entry:—

“**f**rauncis **f**awkner. Entred for his copie vnder the handes of the wardens A booke called the *Iestes of GEORGE PEELE* || . . . vjd.

MERRY CONCEITED JESTS OF GEORGE PEELE.



THE JEST OF GEORGE PEELE WITH FOUR OF HIS COMPANIONS AT BRAINFORD.¹

GEORGE, with others of his associates, being merry together at the tavern, having more store of coin than usually they did possess, although they were as regardless of their silver as a garden-whore is of her honesty ; yet they intended for a season to become good husbands, if they knew how to be sparing of that their pockets were then furnished withal. Five pounds they had amongst them ; and a plot must be cast how they might be merry with extraordinary cheer three or four days, and keep their five pounds whole in stock. George Peele was the man must do it or none, and generally they conjured him by their loves, his own credit, and the reputation that went on him, that he would but in this show his wit ; and withal he should have all the furtherance that in them lay. George, as easy as they earnest to be won to such an exploit, consented, and [they] gathered their money together, and gave it all to George,

¹ " Perhaps Rowlands had this story . . . in his mind when he composed the epigram on *Master Makeshift* in the *Knave of Clubs*."—*Hazlitt*. Probably both writers drew from a common source.

who should be their purse-bearer, and the other four should seem as servants to George Peele ; and the better to colour it, they should go change their cloaks, the one like the other, so near as they could possible ; the which at Beelzebub's brother the broker's they might quickly do. This was soon accomplished, and George was furnished with his black satin suit, and a pair of boots, which were as familiar to his legs as the pillory to a baker's or collier's neck ; and he sufficiently possessed his friends with the whole scope of his intent, as, gentle reader, the sequel will show. Instantly they took a pair of oars, whose arms were to make a false gallop no further than Brainford, where their fare was paid them so liberally, that each of them, the next tide to London, purchased two new waistcoats : yet should these good benefactors come to their usual places of trade, and if they spy a better fare than their own, that happily the gentleman hath more mind to go withal, they will not only fall out with him that is of their own sweet transporters, as they are, but abuse the fare they carry with foul speeches, as "A pox," or "The devil go with you," as their godfather Charon, the ferryman of hell, hath taught them. I speak not this of all, but of some that are brought up in the east, some in the west, some in the north, but most part in the south ; but for the rest, they are honest complete men. Leaving them, to come to my honest George ; who is now merry at The Three Pigeons¹ in Brainford, with sack and sugar, not any wine wanting, the musicians playing, my host drinking, my hostess dancing with the worshipful justice, for so then he was termed, and his mansion-house in Kent, who came thither of purpose to be merry with his men, because he could not so conveniently near home by reason of a shrewish wife he had. My gentle hostess gave him all the entertainment her house could afford ; for Master Peele had paid royally,

¹ A noted inn : it was kept by Lowin the actor in the Civil War time.

for all his five pounds was come to ten groats. Now George Peele's wit labours to bring in that five pounds there was spent; which was soon begotten. Being set at dinner, "My host," quoth George, "how falls the tide out for London?" "Not till the evening," quoth mine host: "have you any business, sir?" "Yes, marry," quoth George, "I intend not to go home this two days: therefore, my host, saddle my man a horse for London, if you be so well furnished, for I must send him for one bag more," quoth George, "ten pounds hath seen no sun this six months." "I am ill furnished if I cannot furnish you with that," quoth my host, and presently saddled him a good nag, and away rides one of George's men to London, attending the good hour of his master Peele in London. In the meantime George bespeaks great cheer to supper, saying, he expected some of his friends from London. Now you must imagine there was not a penny owing in the house, for he had paid as liberal as Cæsar, as far as Cæsar's wealth went; for, indeed, most of the money was one Cæsar's, an honest man yet living in London. But to the catastrophe. All the day before, had one of the other men of George Peele been a great solicitor to my hostess, she would beg leave of his master he might go see a maid, a sweetheart of his, so far as Kingston, and before his master went to bed he would return again; saying he was sure she might command it at his master's hands. My kind hostess willing to pleasure the young fellow, knowing in her time what belonged to such matters, went to Master Peele, and moved him in it, which he angrily refused; but she was so earnest in it, that she swore he should not deny her, protesting he went but to see an uncle of his some five miles off. "Marry, I thank you," quoth George: "my good hostess, would you so discredit me, or hath the knave no more wit than at this time to go, knowing I have no horse here, and would he base cullian go a-foot?" "Nay, good sir," quoth mine hostess, "be not angry, it is not his

intent to go a-foot, for he shall have my mare ; and I will assure you, sir, upon my word, he shall be here again to have you to bed." "Well," quoth George, "hostess, I'll take you at your word, let him go ; his negligence shall light upon you." "So be it," quoth mine hostess. So down goeth she, and sends away civil Thomas, for so she called him, to his sweetheart, backed upon her mare : which Thomas, instead of riding to Kingston, took London in his way ; where meeting with my other horseman, attended the arrival of George Peele, which was not long after. They are at London ; George in his chamber at Brainford, accompanied with none but one Anthony Nit, a barber, who dined and supped with him continually, of whom he had borrowed a lute,¹ to pass away the melancholy afternoon, of which he could play as well as Banks his horse.² The barber very modestly takes his leave : George obsequiously bids him to supper, who (God willing) would not fail. George being left alone with his two supposed men, gave them the mean how to escape, and walking in the court, George found fault with the weather, saying it was rawish and cold ; which word mine hostess hearing, my kind hostess fetched her husband's holiday gown, which George thankfully put about him, and withal called for a cup of sack, after which he would walk into the meadows and practise upon his lute. "'Tis good for your worship to do so," quoth mine hostess : which walk George took directly to Sion ; where having the advantage of a pair of oars at hand, made his³ journey for London. His two associates behind had the plot in their heads by George's instruction for their escape ; for they knew he was gone. My hostess she was in the market, buying of provision for supper ;

¹ Lutes were kept in barbers' shops for the diversion of the customers.

² The wonderful horse Morocco, whose feats are noticed by scores of Elizabethan writers,

³ Old eds. "this."

mine host he was at tables ;¹ and my two masterless men desired the maids to excuse them if their master came, "For," quoth they, "we will go drink two pots with my smug smith's wife at Old Brainford." "I warrant you," quoth the maids. So away went my men to the smith's at Old Brainford, from thence to London ; where they all met, and sold the horse and the mare, the gown and the lute, which money was as badly spent as it was lewdly got. How my host and my hostess looked when they saw the event of this, go but to The Three Pigeons at Brainford, you shall know.

THE JEST OF GEORGE AND THE BARBER,²

GEORGE was not so merry at London with his capons and claret as poor Anthony the barber was sorrowful at Brainford for the loss of his lute ; and therefore determined to come to London to seek out George Peele ; which by the means of a kinsman that Anthony Nit had in London, his name was Cuts or Feats, a fellow that had good skill in tricks on the cards, and he was well acquainted with the

¹ Backgammon.

² "George Pyeboard escapes from the sheriff's officers by a like stratagem. When they arrest him at the suit of his hostess for 'four pound, five shillings, and five pence,' he says, 'If you had not crossed me, I was going in great joy to receive five pound of a gentleman, for the device of a masque here, drawn in this paper ;' and they consent to accompany him to the gentleman's house, on condition of their receiving what remains of the five pounds after the claim of the hostess has been satisfied. George takes them to a house in the next street ; and while the officers think he is talking to the owner of it about the masque, George explains his situation to him, and begs permission to make his exit by a back-door : the good-natured gentleman likes the jest, and George escapes.—*The Puritan*, Act 3, sc. 4 and 5."—*Dyce*.

place where George's common abode was ; and for kindred-sake he directed the barber where he should have him, which was at a blind alehouse in Sea-coal Lane. There he found George in a green jerkin, a Spanish platter-fashioned hat, all alone at a peck of oysters. The barber's heart danced within him for joy he had so happily found him. He gave him the time of the day. George not a little abashed at the sight of the barber, yet went not to discover it openly. He that at all times had a quick invention, was not now behindhand to entertain my barber, who knew for what his coming was. George thus saluted him. "My honest barber," quoth George, "welcome to London: I partly know your business ; you come for your lute, do you not?" "Indeed, sir," quoth the barber, "for that is my coming." "And believe me," quoth George, "you shall not lose your labour ; I pray you stand to and eat an oyster, and I'll go with you presently ; for a gentleman in the city of great worship borrowed it of me for the use of his daughter, that plays exceeding well and had a great desire to have the lute : but, sir, if you will go along with me to the gentleman's house, you shall have your lute with great satisfaction ; for had not you come, I assure you, I had sent [it] to you ; for you must understand that all that was done at Brainford among us mad gentlemen was but a jest, and no otherwise." "Sir, I think not any otherwise," quoth the barber : "but I would desire your worship that as you had it of me in love, so in kindness you would help me to it again." "O God, what else?" quoth George : "I'll go with thee presently, even as I am, for I came from hunting this morning ; and should I go up to the certain gentlemen above, I should hardly get away." "I thank you, sir," quoth the barber. So on goes George with him in his green jerkin, a wand in his hand very pretty, till he came almost at the alderman's house : where making a sudden stay, "Afore God," quoth George, "I must crave thy pardon at this instant, for I have bethought myself,

should I go as I am, it would be imagined I had had some of my lord's hounds out this morning; therefore I'll take my leave of thee, and meet thee where thou wilt about one of the clock." "Nay, good sir," quoth the barber, "go with me now; for I purpose, God willing, to be at Brainford to-night." "Sayest thou so?" quoth George: "why, then, I'll tell thee what thou shalt do: thou art here a stranger and altogether unknown; lend me thy cloak and thy hat, and do thou put on my green jerkin, and I'll go with thee directly along." The barber, loth to leave him until he had his lute, yielded to the change. So when they came to the gentleman's porch, he put on George's green jerkin and his Spanish hat, and he the barber's cloak and his hat. Either of them being thus fitted, George knocks at the door: to whom the porter bids heartily welcome, for George was well known, who at that time had all the oversight of the pageants.¹ He desires the porter to bid his friend welcome; "For he is a good fellow and a keeper, Master Porter, one that at his pleasure can bestow a haunch of venison on you." "Marry, that can I," quoth the barber. "I thank you, sir," answered the porter. "Master Peele, my master is in the hall; pleaseth it you to walk in?" "With all my heart," quoth George: "in the meantime let my friend bear you company." "That he shall, Master Peele," quoth the porter; "and if it please him, he shall take a simple dinner with me." The barber gives him hearty thanks, not misdoubting Master Peele any way, seeing him known; and himself so welcome, fell in chat with the porter. George Peele goes directly to the alderman, who now is come into the court, in the eye of the barber; where George, after many complaints,² draws a blank³ paper out of his bosom, and making action to the

¹ "He's an excellent scholar," says Puttock of George Pyeboard, 'and especially for a masque.'—*The Puritan*, Act 3, sc. 5.—*Dyce*.

² "Qy. 'compliments?'"—*P. A. Daniel*.

³ So *Dyce*.—Old ed. "black."

barber, reads to the alderman as followeth. "I humbly desire your worship to stand my friend in a slight matter. Yonder hard-favoured knave, that sits by your worship's porter, hath dogged me to arrest me, and I had no other means but to take your worship's house for shelter. The occasion is but trivial, only for stealing of a piece of flesh, myself consorted with three or four gentlemen of good fashion, that would not willingly have our names come in question. Therefore, this is my boon ;¹ that your worship would let one of your servants let me out at the garden-door, and I shall think myself much indebted to your worship." The kind gentleman, little dreaming of George Peele's deceit, took him into the parlour, gave him a brace of angels, and caused one of his servants to let George out at the garden-door ; which was no sooner opened, but George made way for the barber seeing him any more, and all the way he went could not choose but laugh at his knavish conceit, how he had gulled the simple barber, who sat all this while with the porter blowing of his nails ; to whom came this fellow that let out George. "You whore-son keeperly rascal," quoth the fellow, "do you come to arrest any honest gentleman in my master's house?" "Not I, so God help me," quoth the barber. "I pray, sir, where is the gentleman, Master Peele, that came along with me?" "Far enough," quoth the fellow, "for your coming near him ; he is gone out at the garden-door." "Garden-door!" quoth the barber ; "why, have you any more doors than one?" "We have, sir ; and get you hence, or I'll set you going, goodman keeper." "Alas," quoth the barber, "sir, I am no keeper, I am quite undone ! I am a barber dwelling at Brainford :" and with weeping tears up and told him how George had used him. The

¹ "May it please your good worship, then, but to uphold my device, which is to let one of your men put me out at a back-door, and I shall be bound to your worship for ever."—*Puritan*, iii. 5.

servant goes in, and tells his master : which when he heard, he could not but laugh at the first ; yet in pity of the poor barber, he gave him twenty shillings towards his loss. The barber sighing took it, and towards Brainford home he goes ; and whereas he came from thence in a new cloak and a fair hat, he went home weeping in an old hat and a green jerkin.

HOW GEORGE PEELE BECAME A PHYSICIAN.

GEORGE on a time being happily furnished both of horse and money, though the horse he hired, and the money he borrowed ; but no matter how he was possessed of them ; and towards Oxford he rides to make merry with his friends and fellow students ; and in his way he took up Wickham, where he sojourned that night. Being at supper, accompanied with his hostess, among other table-talk, they fell into discourse of chirurgery, of which my hostess was a simple professor. George Peele, observing the humour of my she-chirurgeon, upheld her in all the strange cures she talked of, and praised her womanly endeavour ; telling her, he loved her so much the better, because it was a thing that he professed, both physic and chirurgery : and George had a dictionary of physical words, that it might set a better gloss upon that which he seemingly professed ; and told his good hostess, at his return he would teach her something that should do her no hurt ; “ For,” quoth he, “ at this instant I am going about a great cure, as far as Warwickshire, to a gentleman of great living, and one that hath been in a consumption this half year, and I hope to do him good.” “ O God,” quoth the hostess, “ there is a gentleman not a quarter of a mile off, that hath been a long time sick of the same disease. Believe me, sir,” quoth the hostess, “ would it please your worship, ere your departure

in the morning, but to visit the gentleman, and but spend your opinion of him, and I make no question but the gentlewoman will be very thankful to you." "I faith," quoth George, "happily at my return I may; but at this time my haste is such that I cannot; and so good night, mine hostess." So away went George to bed; and my giddy hostess, right of the nature of most women, thought that night as long as ten, till she was delivered of that burden of news which she had received from my new doctor, for so he termed himself. Morning being come, at break of the day mine hostess trudges to this gentleman's house, acquainteth his wife what an excellent man she had at her house; protesting he was the best seen in physic, and had done the most strangest cures that ever she heard of; saying, that if she would but send for him, no question he would do him good. The gentlewoman, glad to hear of anything that might procure the health of her husband, presently sent one of her men to desire the doctor to come and visit her husband. Which message when George heard, he wondered; for he had no more skill in physic than in music; and they were as distant both from him as heaven from hell. But, to conclude, George set a bold face on it, and away went he to the sick gentleman: where when he came, after some compliment to the gentlewoman, he was brought to the chamber, where the ancient gentleman lay wonderful sick, for all physic had given him over. George begins to feel his pulses and his temples, saying, he was very far spent: "Yet," quoth he, "under God, I will do him some good, if nature be not quite extinct." Whereupon he demanded whether they had ever a garden? "That I have," quoth the gentlewoman. "I pray you direct me thither," quoth George. Where when he came, he cut a handful of every flower, herb and blossom, or whatsoever else in the garden, and brought them in in the lappet of his cloak, boiled them in ale, strained them, boiled them again; and when he had all the juice out of them, of which

he made some pottle of drink, he caused the sick gentleman to drink off a maudlin cupful, and willed his wife to give him of that same at morning, noon, and night; protesting, if anything in this world did him good, it must be that; giving great charge to the gentlewoman to keep him wonderful warm: "And at my return," quoth George, "some ten days hence, I will return and see how he fares; for," quoth he, "by that time something will be done; and so I will take my leave." "Not so," quoth the gentlewoman; "your worship must needs stay and take a simple dinner with me to-day." "Indeed," quoth George, "I cannot now stay; my haste is such, I must presently to horse." You may suppose George was in haste until he was out of the gentleman's house; for he knew not whether he had poisoned the gentleman or not, which made him so eager to be gone out of the gentleman's house. The gentlewoman, seeing she could by no means stay him, gave him two brace of angels, which never shined long in his purse, and desired him at his return to know her house: which George promised, and with seeming niceness took the gold, and towards Oxford went he, forty shillings heavier than he was; where he bravely domineered while his physical money lasted. But to see the strangeness of this. Whether it was the virtue of some herb which he gathered, or the conceit the gentleman had of George Peele, but it so pleased God the gentleman recovered; and in eight days walked abroad; and that fortunate potion which George made at random, did him more good than many pounds that he had spent in half a year before in physic. George, his money being spent, he made his return towards London; and when he came within a mile of the gentleman's house, he inquired of a country fellow how such a gentleman did? The fellow told him, God be praised, his good landlord was well recovered by a virtuous gentleman that came this way by chance. "Art thou sure of it?" quoth George. "Yes, believe me," quoth the fellow; "I saw him in the

fields but this morning." This was no simple news to George. He presently set spurs to his horse, and whereas he thought to shun the town, he went directly to his inn : at whose arrival, the hostess clapped her hands ; the ostler laughed ; the tapster leaped ; the chamberlain ran to the gentleman's house, and told him the doctor was come. How joyful the gentleman was, let them imagine that have any after-healths. George Peele was sent for ; and after a million of thanks from the gentleman and his friends, George Peele had twenty pounds delivered him ; which money, how long it was a-spending, let the taverns in London witness.

HOW GEORGE HELPED HIS FRIEND TO A SUPPER.

GEORGE was invited one night by certain of his friends to supper at The White Horse in Friday Street ; and in the evening as he was going, he met with an old friend of his, who was so ill at the stomach, hearing George tell him of the good cheer he went to, himself being unprovided both of meat and money, that he swore he had rather have gone a mile about than have met him at that instant. "And believe me," quoth George, "I am heartily sorry that I cannot take thee along with me, myself being but an invited guest ; besides, thou art out of clothes, unfitting for such a company : marry, this I'll do ; if thou wilt follow my advice, I'll help thee to thy supper." "Any way," quoth he to George : "do thou but devise the means, and I'll execute it." George presently told him what he should do ; so they parted. George well entertained, with extraordinary welcome, and seated at the upper end of the table, supper being brought up, H. M. watched his time

below ; and when he saw that the meat was carried up, up he follows, as George had directed him : who when George saw, "You whoreson rascal," quoth George, "what make you here?" "Sir," quoth he, "I am come from the party you wot of." "You rogue," quoth George, "have I not forewarned you of this?" "I pray you, sir," quoth he, "hear my errand." "Do you prate, you slave?" quoth George ; and with that took a rabbit out of the dish, and threw it at him. Quoth he, "You use me very hardly." "You dunghill," quoth George, "do you outface me?" and with that took the other rabbit, and threw it at his head ; after that a loaf ; then drawing his dagger, making an offer to throw it, the gentleman stayed him. Meanwhile H. M. got the loaf and the two rabbits, and away he went : which when George saw he was gone, after a little fretting, he sat quietly. So by that honest shift he helped his friend to his supper, and was never suspected for it of the company.

HOW GEORGE PEELE WAS SHAVEN, AND OF THE REVENGE HE TOOK.¹

THERE was a gentleman that dwelt in the west country, and had stayed here in London a term longer than he intended, by reason of a book that George had to translate out of Greek into English ; and when he wanted money, George had it of the gentleman : but the more he supplied him of coin, the further off he was from his book, and could get no end of it, neither by fair means, entreaty, or double

¹ The revenge is described in the chapter "How the gentleman was gulled for shaving of George" (p. 392).

payment ; for George was of the poetical disposition, never to write so long as his money lasted ; some quarter of the book being done, and lying in his hands at random. The gentleman had plotted a means to take such an order with George next time he came, that he would have his book finished. It was not long before he had his company. His arrival was for more money : the gentleman bids him welcome, causeth him to stay dinner ; where falling into discourse about his book, found that it was as near ended as he left it two months ago. The gentleman, meaning to be gulled no longer, caused two of his men to bind George, hand and foot, in a chair. A folly it was for him to ask what they meant by it : the gentleman sent for a barber ; and George had a beard of an indifferent size and well grown : he made the barber shave him, beard and head, left him as bare of hair as he was of money. The barber he was well contented for his pains, who left George like an old woman in man's apparel ; and his voice became it well, for it was more woman than man. "George," quoth the gentleman, "I have always used you like a friend ; my purse hath been open to you : that you have of mine to translate, you know it is a thing I highly esteem ; therefore I have used you in this fashion, that I might have an end of my book, which shall be as much for your profit as my pleasure." So forthwith he commanded his men to unbind him ; and putting his hand into his pocket, gave him two brace of angels. Quoth he, "Master Peele, drink this, and by that time you have finished my book, your beard will be grown ; until which time I know you will be ashamed to walk abroad." George patiently took the gold, said little, and when it was dark night, took his leave of the gentleman, and went directly home : who when his wife saw, I omit the wonder she made, but imagine those that shall behold their husbands in such a case. To bed went George ; and ere morning he had plotted sufficiently how to cry *quid pro quo* with his politic gentleman.

THE JEST OF GEORGE PEELE AT BRISTOW.¹

GEORGE was at Bristow, and there staying somewhat longer than his coin would last him, his palfrey that should be his carrier to London, his head was grown so big that he could not get him out of the stable. It so fortun'd at that instant, certain players came to the town, and lay at that inn where George Peele was : to whom George was well known, being in that time an excellent poet, and had acquaintance of most of the best players in England : from the trivial sort he was but so so ; of which these were ; only knew George by name, no otherwise. There was not past three of the company come with the carriage, the rest were behind, by reason of a long journey they had, so that night they could not enact ; which George hearing, had presently a strata-gem in his head to get his horse free out of the stable, and money in his purse to bear his charges up to London. And thus it was. He goes directly to the mayor, tells him he was a scholar and a gentleman, and that he had a certain history² of *The Knight of the Rhodes* ; and withal, how Bristow was first founded and by whom, and a brief of all those that before him had succeeded in office in that worshipful city ; desiring the mayor, that he with his presence, and the rest of his brethren, would grace his labours. The mayor agreed to it, gave him leave, and withal appointed him a place, but for himself, he could not be there, being in the evening ; but bad him make the best benefit he could of the city, and very liberally gave him an angel ; which George thankfully receives, and about his business he goes, got his stage made, his history

¹ "See No. 133 of *Merry Tales and Quick Answers*, ed. 1567."—*Hazlitt*.

² Historical play.

cried, and hired the players' apparel, to flourish out his show, promising to pay them liberally; and withal desired them they would favour him so much as to gather him his money at the door; for he thought it his best course to employ them, lest they should spy out his knavery, for they have perilous heads. They willingly yield to do him any kindness that lies in them; in brief, carry their apparel to the hall, place themselves at the door; where George in the meantime, with the ten shillings he had of the mayor, delivered his horse out of purgatory, and carries him to the town's end, and there placeth him to be ready at his coming. By this time the audience were come, and some forty shillings gathered; which money George put in his purse, and putting on one of the players' silk robes, after the trumpet had sounded thrice,¹ out he comes, makes low obeisance, goes forward with his prologue, which was thus:

“ A trifling toy, a jest of no account, perdy;²
 The knight, perhaps you think for to be I:
 Think on so still; for why³ you know that thought is free:
 Sit still a while, I'll send the actors to ye.”

Which being said, after some fire-works that he had made of purpose, threw out among them, and down stairs goes he, gets to his horse, and so with forty shillings to London; leaves the players to answer it; who when the jest was known, their innocence excused them, being as well gulled as the mayor and the audience.

¹ It was the custom for the Prologue to enter at the third sounding of the trumpet. See Prologue to *Every Man out of his Humour*, *Cynthia's Revels*, &c.

² Verily.

³ “For why”—because.

HOW GEORGE GULLED A PUNK,

OTHERWISE CALLED A CROSHABELL.

COMING to London, he fell in company with a cockatrice ; which pleased his eye so well, that George fell a-boarding of her, and proffered her the wine, which my croschabell willingly accepted. To the tavern they go ; where, after a little idle talk, George fell to the question about the thing you wot of. My she-hobby was very dainty, which made George far more eager ; and my lecherous animal proffered largely to obtain his purpose. To conclude, nothing she would grant unto except ready coin, which was forty shillings, not a farthing less ; if so he would, next night she would appoint him where he should meet her. George saw how the game went, that she was more for lucre than for love, thus cunningly answered her ; “Gentlewoman, howsoever you speak, I do not think your heart agrees with your tongue : the money you demand is but to try me, and indeed but a trifle to me ; but because it shall not be said I bought that gem of you I prize so highly, I’ll give you a token to-morrow, that shall be more worth than your demand, if so you please to accept it.” “Sir,” quoth she, “it contenteth me well ; and so, if please you, at this time we’ll part, and to-morrow in the evening meet you where you shall appoint.” The place was determined ; and they kissed and parted, she home, George into Saint Thomas Apostle’s, to a friend of his, of whom he knew he could take up a petticoat of trust ; the first letter of his name begins with G. A petticoat he had of him, at the price of five shillings ; which money is owing till this day. The next night being come, they met at the place appointed, which was a tavern : there they were to sup ; that ended, George was to go home with her, to end

his yeoman's plea in her common case. But Master Peele had another drift in his mazzard ; for he did so ply her with wine, that in a small time she spun such a thread, that she reeled homewards, and George he was fain to be her supporter. When to her house she came, with nothing so much painting in the inside as her face had on the outside, with much ado her maid had her to bed ; who was no sooner laid, but she fell fast asleep : which when George perceived, he sent the maid for milk and a quart of sack to make a posset ; where, before her return, George made so bold as to take up his own new petticoat, a fair gown of hers, two gold rings that lay in the window, and away he went. The gown and the gold rings he made a chaffer of ; the petticoat he gave to his honest wife, one of the best deeds he ever did to her. How the croschabell looked when she awaked and saw this, I was never there to know.

HOW THE GENTLEMAN WAS GULLED FOR SHAVING OF GEORGE.

GEORGE had a daughter of the age of ten years, a girl of a pretty form, but of an excellent wit : all part of her was father, save her middle ; and she [*i.e.* her] had George so tutored all night, that although himself was the author of it, yet had he been transformed into his daughter's shape, he could not have done it with more conceit. George at that time dwelt at the Bankside : from whence comes this she-Sinon,¹ early in the morning, with her hair dishevelled,

¹ So Dyce.—Old eds. "she-sinnow" and "she-sinnew."

wringing her hands, and making such pitiful moan, with shrieks and tears, and beating of her breast, that made the people in a maze. Some stood wondering at the child, others plucked her to know the occasion; but none could stay her by any means, but on she kept her journey, crying "O, her father, her good father, her dear father!" over the Bridge, thorough Cheapeside, and so to the Old Bailey, where the gentleman sojourned. There sitting herself down, a hundred people gaping upon her, there she begins to cry out, "Woe to that place, that her father ever saw it! she was a cast-away, her mother was undone!" till with the noise one of the gentleman's men coming down, looked on her, and knew her to be George Peele's daughter. He presently runs up, and tells his master, who commanded his man to bring her up. The gentleman was in a cold sweat, fearing that George had, for the wrong that he did him the day before, some way undone himself. When the girl came up, he demanded the cause why she so lamented and called upon her father? George his flesh and blood, after a million of sighs, cried "Out upon him! he had made her father, her good father, drown himself:" which words once uttered, she fell into a counterfeit swoon; whom the gentleman soon recovered. This news went to his heart: and he being a man of a very mild condition, cheered up the girl; made his men to go buy her new clothes from top to toe; said he would be a father to her; gave her five pounds; bid her go home and carry it to her mother, and in the evening he would visit her. At this, by little and little, she began to be quiet, desiring him to come and see her mother. He tells her he will not fail; bids her go home quietly. So down stairs goes she pertly; and the wondering people that stayed at door to hear the manner of her grief, had of her naught but knavish answers, and home went she directly. The gentleman was so crossed in mind, and disturbed in thought at this unhappy accident, that his soul could not be in quiet till he had been with this

woful widow, as he thought ; and presently went to Black Friars, took a pair of oars, and went directly to George Peele's house : where he found his wife plucking of larks, my crying crocodile turning of the spit, and George, pinned up in a blanket, at his translation. The gentleman, more glad at the unlooked-for life of George than [grieved at] the loss of his money, took part of the good cheer George had to dinner ; wondered at the cunning of the wench ; and within some few days after had an end of his book.

HOW GEORGE READ A PLAY-BOOK TO A
GENTLEMAN.

THERE was a gentleman whom God had endued with good living to maintain his small wit : he was not a fool absolute, although in this world he had good fortune ; and he was in a manner an inglé¹ to George, one that took great delight to have the first hearing of any work that George had done, himself being a writer, and had a poetical invention of his own, which when he had with great labour finished, their fatal end was for privy purposes. This self-conceited brock² had George invited to half-a-score sheets of paper ; whose Christianly pen had writ *Finis* to the famous play of *The Turkish Mahamet and Hyrin the fair Greek*,³ in Italian called a curtezan, in Spain, a margerite, in French, *une curtain*,⁴ in England, among the barbarous, a whore,

¹ Familiar.

² Badger,—a term of contempt.

³ Concerning this lost play of Peele's see *Introduction*.

⁴ " Qy. ' putain' ?"—*P. A. Daniel*.

but among the gentle, their usual associates, a punk: but now the word refined being latest, and the authority brought from a climate as yet unconquered, the fruitful county of Kent, they call them *crashabell*, which is a word but lately used, and fitting with their trade, being of a lovely and courteous condition. Leaving them, this fantastic, whose brain was made of naught but cork and sponge, came to the cold lodging of Monsieur Peele, in his black satin suit, his gown furred with cony, in his slippers. Being in the evening, he thought to hear George's book, and so to return to his inn; this not of the wisest, being of Saint Barnard's. George bids him welcome; told him he would gladly have his opinion in his book. He willingly condescended; and George begins to read, and between every scene he would make pauses, and demand his opinion how he liked the carriage of it. Quoth he, "Wondrous well, the conveyance." "O, but," quoth George, "the end is far better;" for he meant another conveyance ere they two departed. George was very tedious in reading, and the night grew old. "I protest," quoth the gentleman, "I have stayed over-long; I fear me I shall hardly get into mine inn." "If you fear that," quoth George, "we will have a clean pair of sheets, and you shall take a simple lodging here." This house-gull willingly embraced it, and to bed they go: where George, in the midst of the night, spying his time, put on this dormouse his clothes, desired God to keep him in good rest, honestly takes leave of him and the house to whom he was indebted four nobles. When this drone awaked, and found himself so left, he had not the wit to be angry, but swore scurvily at the misfortune, and said, "I thought he would not have used me so." And although it so pleased the fates he had another suit to put on, yet he could not get thence till he had paid the money George owed to the house, which for his credit he did; and when he came to his lodging, in anger he made a poem of it:

“ Peele is no poet, but a gull and clown,
 To take away my clothes and gown :
 I vow, by Jove, if I can see him wear it,
 I'll give him a glyg, and patiently bear it.’

HOW GEORGE PEELE SERVED HALF A SCORE CITIZENS.

GEORGE once had invited half a score of his friends to a great supper, where they were passing merry, no cheer wanting, wine enough, music playing: the night growing on, and being upon departure, they call for a reckoning. George swears there is not a penny for them to pay. They, being men of good fashion, by no means will yield unto it, but every man throws down his money, some ten shillings, some five, some more; protesting, something they will pay. “Well,” quoth George, taking up all the money, “seeing you will be so wilful, you shall see what shall follow.” He commands the music to play, and while they were skipping and dancing, George gets his cloak, sends up two bottles of hippocras,¹ and leaves them and the reckoning to pay. They, wondering at the stay of George, meant to be gone; but they were stayed by the way, and before they went, forced to pay the reckoning anew. This showed a mind in him, he cared not whom he deceived, so he profited himself for the present.

¹ Old eds. “hypocrist.”

A JEST OF GEORGE RIDING TO OXFORD.¹

THERE was some half-dozen of citizens that had oftentimes been solicitors to George, he being a Master of Art at the University of Oxford, that he would ride with them to the Commencement, it being at midsummer. George, willing to pleasure the gentlemen his friends, rode along with them. When they had rode the better part of the way, they baited at a village called Stoken, five miles from Wycombe. Good cheer was bespoken for dinner; and frolic was the company, all but George, who could not be in that pleasant vein that did ordinarily possess him, by reason he was without money: but he had not fetched forty turns about the chamber, before his noddle had entertained a conceit how to money himself with credit, and yet glean it from some one of the company. There was among them one excellent ass, a fellow that did nothing but frisk up and down the chamber, that his money might be heard chide in his pocket. This fellow had George observed, and secretly conveyed his gilt rapier-and-dagger into another chamber, and there closely hid it: that done, he called up the tapster, and upon his cloak borrows five shillings for an hour or so, till his man came, as he could fashion it well enough. So much money he had; and then who more merry than George! Meat was brought up: they set themselves to dinner, all full of mirth, especially my little fool, who drank² not of the

¹ "In *The Puritan*, Captain Idle (who is in prison) and George Pyeboard persuade Nicholas to steal Sir Godfrey's gold chain, to hide it in the garden, and to inform the simple knight that Idle is a great conjurer able to recover it: Sir Godfrey procures the release of Idle, who, assisted by George Pyeboard, plays the conjurer, and makes the Devil drop the chain on a rosemary-bank.—Act 1, s. 4; Act 4, s. 2."—*Dyce*.

² "Qy. 'dreamed'?"—*Dyce*.

conclusion of their feast. Dinner ended, much prattle past, every man begins to buckle to his furniture : among whom this highcock missed his rapier ; at which all the company were in a maze ; he besides his wits, for he had borrowed it of a special friend of his, and swore he had rather spend twenty nobles. "This is strange," quoth George, "it should be gone in this fashion, none being here but ourselves, and the fellows of the house ;" who were examined, but no rapier could be heard of : all the company much grieved ; but George, in a pitiful chafe, swore it should cost him forty shillings but he would know what was become of it, if art could do it : and with that he caused the ostler to saddle his nag ; for George would ride to a scholar, a friend of his, that had skill in such matters. "O good Master Peele," quoth the fellow, "want no money : here is forty shillings ; see what you can do ; and if you please, I'll ride along with you." "Not so," quoth George, taking his forty shillings, "I'll ride alone, and be you as merry as you can till my return." So George left them, and rode directly to Oxford. There he acquaints a friend of his with all the circumstance ; who presently took horse and rode along with him to laugh at the jest. When they came back, George tells them he had brought one of the rarest men in England ; whom they with much compliment bid welcome. He, after a distracted countenance and strange words, takes this bullfinch by the wrist, and carried him into the privy, and there willed him to put in his head, but while he had written his name and told forty : which he willingly did. That done, the scholar asked him what he saw ? "By my faith, sir, I smelt a villanous scent, but I saw nothing." "Then I have," quoth he ; and with that directed him where his rapier was ; saying, "It is just north-east, enclosed in wood near the earth : " for which they all made diligent search, till George, who hid it under a settle, found it, to the comfort of the fellow, the joy of the company, and the eternal credit of his friend, who was

entertained with wine and sugar : and George redeemed his cloak, rode merrily to Oxford, having coin in his pocket, where this loach spares not for any expense, for the good fortune he had in the happy finding of his rapier.

HOW GEORGE SERVED HIS HOSTESS.

GEORGE lying at an old widow's house, and had gone so far on the score that his credit would stretch no farther ; for she had made a vow not to depart¹ with drink or victuals without ready money. Which George, seeing the fury of his froward hostess, in grief kept his chamber ; called to his hostess, and told her, "She should understand that he was not without money, how poorly soever he appeared to her, and that my diet shall testify ; in the meantime, good hostess," quoth he, "send for such a friend of mine." She did : so his friend came ; to whom George imparted his mind, the effect whereof was this, to pawn his cloak, hose, and doublet, unknown to his hostess : "For," quoth George, "this seven nights do I intend to keep my bed." Truly he spake, for his intent was, the bed should not keep him any longer. Away goes he to pawn his apparel : George bespeaks good cheer to supper, which was no shamle-butcher-stuff, but according to the place ; for, his chamber being remote from the house, at the end of the garden, his apparel being gone, it appeared to him as the counter ; therefore, to comfort himself, he dealt in poultry.² His friend brought the money, supped with him : his hostess he very liberally paid, but cavilled with her at her unkindness,

¹ Part.

² "A quibbling allusion to the Counter Prison in the Poultry."—*Dyce*.

vowing that, while he lay there, none should attend him but his friend. The hostess replied, a' God's name, she was well contented with it : so was George too ; for none knew better than himself what he intended. But, in brief, thus he used his kind hostess. After his apparel and money was gone, he made bold with the feather-bed he lay on, which his friend slyly conveyed away, having as villanous a wolf in his belly as George, though not altogether so wise, for that feather-bed they devoured in two days, feathers and all ; which was no sooner digested, but away went the coverlet, sheets, and the blanket ; and at the last dinner, when George's good friend perceiving nothing left but the bed-cords, as the devil would have it, straight came in his mind the fashion of a halter, the foolish kind knave would needs fetch a quart of sack for his friend George ; which sack to this day never saw vintner's cellar : and so he left George in a cold chamber, a thin shirt, a ravished bed, no comfort left him but the bare bones of deceased capons. In this distress George bethought him what he might do : nothing was left him ; and as his eye wandered up and down the empty chamber, by chance he spied out an old armour, at which sight George was the joyfulest man in Christendom ; for the armour of Achilles, that Ulysses and Ajax strove for, was not more precious to them, than this to him ; for he presently claps it upon his back, the halbert in his hand, the morion on his head ; and so gets out the back way, marches from Shoreditch to Clerkenwell, to the no small wonder of those spectators that beheld him. Being arrived to the wished haven he would be, an old acquaintance of his furnished him with an old suit and an old cloak for his old armour. How the hostess looked when she saw that metamorphosis in her chamber, judge those bomborts¹ that live by tapping, between the age of fifty and three-score.

¹ Skinkers, drawers. (*Bombard* was a name for a large leathern drinking-vessel.)

HOW HE SERVED A TAPSTER.

GEORGE was making merry with three or four of his friends in Pye-corner, where the tapster of the house was much given to poetry; for he had engrossed *The Knight of the Sun*,¹ *Venus and Adonis*,² and other pamphlets, which the stripling had collected together; and knowing George to be a poet, he took great delight in his company, and out of his bounty would bestow a brace of cans of him. George observing the humour of the tapster, meant presently to work upon him. "What will you say," quoth George to his friends, "if out of this spirit of the cellar I fetch a good angel that shall bid us all to supper?" "We would gladly see that," quoth his friends. "Content yourself," quoth George. The tapster ascends with his two cans; delivers one to Master Peele, and the other to his friends; gives them kind welcome: but George, instead of giving him thanks, bids him not to trouble him, and begins in these terms. "I protest, gentlemen, I wonder you will urge me so much; I swear I have it not about me." "What is the matter?" quoth the tapster; "hath any one angered you?" "No, faith," quoth George; "I'll tell thee, it is this. There is a friend of ours in Newgate for nothing but only the command of the justices; and he being now to be released, sends to me to bring him an angel. Now the man I love dearly well, and if he want ten angels, he shall have them, for I know him sure: but here's the misery, either I must go home, or I must be forced to pawn this;" and plucks

¹ The famous romance, or group of romances, *The Mirror of Knight-hood*, translated from the Spanish; in nine parts, 1579-1601.

² Shakespeare's poem.

an old Harry-groat¹ out of his pocket. The tapster looks upon it: "Why, and it please you, sir," quoth he, "this is but a groat." "No, sir," quoth George, "I know it is but a groat: but this groat will I not lose for forty pounds; for this groat had I of my mother as a testimony of a lease of a house I am to possess after her decease; and if I should lose this groat, I were in a fair case; and either I must pawn this groat, or there the fellow must lie still." Quoth the tapster, "If it please you, I will lend you an angel on it, and I will assure you it shall be safe." "Wilt thou?" quoth George: "as thou art an honest man, lock it up in thy chest, and let me have it whensoever I call for it." "As I am an honest man, you shall," quoth the tapster. George delivered him his groat: the tapster gave him ten shillings: to the tavern go they with the money, and there merrily spend it. It fell out in a small time after, the tapster, having many of these lurches,² fell to decay, and indeed was turned out of service, having no more coin in the world than this groat; and in this misery he met George as poor as himself. "O sir," quoth the tapster, "you are happily met; I have your groat safe, though since I saw you last, I have bid great extremity: and I protest, save that groat, I have not any one penny in the world; therefore I pray you, sir, help me to my money, and take your pawn." "Not for the world," quoth George: "thou sayest thou hast but that groat in the world; my bargain was, that thou shouldst keep that groat until I did demand it of thee; I ask thee none. I will do thee far more good, because thou art an honest fellow; keep thou that groat still, till I call for it; and so doing, the proudest Jack in England cannot justify that thou art not worth a groat; otherwise they might: and so, honest Michael, farewell." So George leaves the poor tapster picking of his fingers,

¹ Groat of Henry the Eighth.

² "Having many of these lurches"—having been often duped.

his head full of proclamations what he might do; at last, sighing, he ends with this proverb:—

“ For the price of a barrel of beer
I have bought a groat's-worth of wit:
Is not that dear?”

HOW GEORGE SERVED A GENTLEWOMAN.¹

GEORGE used often to an ordinary in this town, where a kinswoman of the good wife's in the house held a great pride and vain opinion of her own mother-wit; for her tongue was as a jack continually wagging; and for she had heard that George was a scholar, she thought she would find a time to give him notice that she had as much in her head as ever was in her grandfather's. Yet in some things she differed from the women in those days; for their natural complexion was their beauty: now this titmouse, what she is scanted by nature, she doth replenish by art, as her boxes of red and white daily can testify. But to come to George, who arrived at the ordinary among other gallants, throws his cloak upon the table, salutes the gentlemen, and presently calls for a cup of canary. George had a pair of hose on, that for some offence durst not be seen in that hue they were first dyed in, but from his first colour being a youthful green, his long age turned him into a mournful black, and for his antiquity was in print. Which this busy body perceiving, thought now to give it him to the quick; and drawing near Master Peele, looking upon his breeches, “By my troth, sir,” quoth she, “these are exceedingly well

¹ “See Thoms' *Anecdotes and Traditions*, p. 23 (Camden Society). A portion of the story is there told of Sir John Heydon and the Lady Cary.”—*Hazlitt*.

printed." At which word, George being a little moved in his mind that his old hose were called in question answered, "And, by my faith, mistress," quoth George, "your face is most damnably ill painted." "How mean you, sir?" quoth she. "Marry, thus, mistress," quoth George; "that if it were not for printing and painting,¹ my arse and your face would grow out of reparations." At which she biting her lip, in a parrot fury went down the stairs. The gentlemen laughed at the sudden answer of George, and being seated to dinner, the gentlemen would needs have the company of this witty gentlewoman to dine with them; who with little denying came, in hope to cry quittance with George. When she was ascended, the gentlemen would needs place her by Master Peele; because they did use to dart one at another, they thought it meet, for their more safety, they should be placed nearest together. George kindly entertains her, and being seated, he desires her to reach him the capon that stood by her, and he would be so bold as to carve for his money: and as she put out her arm to take the capon, George sitting by her, yerks me out a huge fart, which made all the company in amaze, one looking upon the other, yet they knew it came that way. "Peace," quoth George, and jogs her on the elbow, "I will say it was I." At which all the company fell into a huge laughter; she into a fretting fury, vowing never she should sleep quietly till she was revenged of George his wrong done unto her; and so in a great chafe left their company.

¹ "Compare:

'*Flavia*. Pray you, in ancient times were not those satin hose? In good faith, now they are new-dyed, pinked, and scowered, they show as well as if they were new. What, mute, Balurdo?

'*Feliche*. Ay, in faith, and 'twere not for printing and painting, my breech and your face would be out of reparation.'—Marston's *Antonio and Mellida*, First Part, 1602, act ii. sc. 1.—*Dyce*.

INDEX.



- ABATE, i. 190
 Accoy, ii. 274
 A-life, ii. 182
 All amort, i. 137, 303
 Allegate, ii. 154
 Almain, i. 30
 Amate, ii. 139
 Ambidexter, ii. 131
 Amiss, i. 38, 56, &c.
 Amort, *see* All amort
 Ancient, ii. 104
 Apaid, i. 354
 Apes in hell, i. 52
 Approve, i. 356
 Argolet, i. 235
 Ariosto quoted, i. 211
 Arming-sword, ii. 262
 Arrest, ii. 211
 As hard as the world goes, i.
 317
 Aston'd, ii. 206
 Attonce, i. 57
 Autor, i. 193

 BANDALIER, ii. 290
 Banks his horse, ii. 378
 Bases, ii. 290, 327
 Be (=by), ii. 144
 Be with him to bring, ii. 131
 Bedare, ii. 80
 Beleek, i. 38; ii. 257

 Beray, ii. 100, 122, &c.
 Bid base, i. 182
 Blount, Sir Charles, ii. 293
 Bombort, ii. 400
 Bonomably, ii. 174
 Bowes, Master Ralph, ii. 297
 Brabble, i. 130
 Brave, ii. 173, 184
 Bravery, i. 10
 Braves, i. 125, 181
 Break, ii. 156
 Break no square, i. 95
 Brief, i. 25
 Brock, ii. 394
 Bug, i. 237
 Bulk, ii. 72
 Bunting, i. 7
 Burke, Lord, ii. 291
 Busky, i. 189
 Bysse, ii. 324, 333

 CAMILLA, ii. 295
 Cammock, ii. 313
 Champion, Thomas, ii. 319
 Cantred, i. 159
 Carey, Master Robert, ii. 294
 Castle of Comfort, ii. 163
 Cato's *Pueriles*, i. 169
 Cham, ii. 171
 Chare ("this chare is chared"),
 i. 137

- Charlemagne, play on the subject
 of, ii. 238
 Charm, i. 14
 Chave, i. 9
 Chest, ii. 109
 Chinks, ii. 131
 Cipher in agrum, i. 93
 Cithaeron, i. 68
 Cloak, ii. 135
 Coast, ii. 96
 Cockle-bread, i. 332
 Compton, Lord, ii. 290
 Consort, ii. 237
 Conster, i. 27
 Controm, ii. 179
 Cony-gat, ii. 311
 Cooke, Sir Anthony, ii. 296
 Copesmates, ii. 126
 Corps, ii. 103
 Cotten, i. 150
 Could, ii. 326
 Counterfeit, ii. 77
 Courtbold, ii. 172
 Couth, ii. 269
 Coy, i. 36
 Crackrope, ii. 173
 Crank, ii. 270
 Crankly, ii. 246
 Cross, i. 171
 Crowd, i. 168 ; ii. 270
 Cumberland (George Clifford,
 Earl of), ii. 288
 Cursen, ii. 172
 Cypress-springs, i. 68

 DANIEL, Samuel, ii. 319
 Dare, ii. 132
 Davers (or Danvers), Master
 Charles, ii. 299
 Daysman, i. 58 ; ii. 246
 Deck, i. 140
 Defy, ii. 176
 Denny, Sir Edward, ii. 291
 Deny, ii. 224, 227

 Depart, i. 347 ; ii. 399
 Deprave (=deprive), ii. 120, &c.
 Detract, ii. 170, 206
 Dictamnum, i. 36
 Diety, i. 128
 Digby, Master Everard, ii. 299
 Ding, i. 270
 Discoloured, ii. 8
 Disgest, i. 254
 Disguised, ii. 242
 Disposed, i. 135
 Distain, i. 260
 Do withal, ii. 182
Dodypoll, Doctor (part of a song
 by Peele found in), ii. 366
 Done or don (=do), i. 364 ; ii. 345
Donkin Dargeson, ii. 370
 Doubt, ii. 116
 Dowland, John, ii. 302
 Du Bartas imitated, ii. 29

 EATHLY, ii. 328
 Egal, i. 64
 Embased, i. 30
 Endeavour, ii. 98
 Entreat, ii. 176, 192, &c.
 Equal, ii. 247

 FACT, ii. 21
 False ("false his troth"), i. 40
 Fancy, ii. 161
 Farewell and a thousand, i. 313
 Favour, ii. 18
 Fere, ii. 265, 318
 Fescues, ii. 326
 Fetch, ii. 253
 Fine, i. 365
 Fit as a pudding for a friar's
 mouth, i. 102
 Flig, i. 195
 Folter, ii. 178
 For why, i. 206 ; ii. 94, &c.
 Force, ii. 154, 195
 Foreslow, i. 278

- Four Sons of Aymon*, ii. 295
 Freight, ii. 359
 Franion, i. 303, 324
 Fraunce, Abraham, ii. 319
 Fro, i. 363, &c.
 Froe, i. 24
 Frump, ii. 271
 Fuller's *Worthies* quoted, i. 249
 Funerals, i. 293, 324

 GAIN-LEGG'D, i. 112
 Gar, ii. 269
 Gerrard, Master Thomas, ii. 289
 Gis, i. 159
 Gite, ii. 43, 263
 Give aim, i. 172
 Glaze, ii. 215
 Go's bones, ii. 171
 God's ames, ii. 105
 Gog's blood, ii. 128
 Gog's ounds, ii. 213
 Gold chains worn by persons of
 dignity, i. 141
 Golding, Arthur, quoted, i. 18
 Gree ("accept in gree"), i. 16 ;
 ii. 337
 Green gown, i. 100
 Greene, Robert, his *Orlando*
 Furioso, i. 344
 Gresham, Master William, ii. 294

 HARRINGTON, Sir John, ii. 318
 Harry-groats, ii. 402
 Harvey, Gabriel, his hexameters
 ridiculed, i. 334
 Hauzen, ii. 321
 Hearse, ii. 182
 Hent, ii. 249, 263, &c.
 Heydon, Sir John, ii. 403
 Hight, i. 13
 History, ii. 389

 IF gods to fore, ii. 227
 Ignomious, ii. 91

 Ignomy, ii. 108, 147
 Imp, ii. 361
 Ingle, ii. 394
 Intend, ii. 311

 JACK, i. 202
 Jonson, Ben (his ridicule of pas-
 sages of the *Battle of Alcazar*),
 i. 250
 Journ, ii. 207
 Joy, ii. 150
 July-flower, i. 12

 KEEP, ii. 125, &c.
 Kind, i. 35, 165, &c.
 Kinderkind, i. 107
 Kindless, ii. 19
Knight of the Sun, ii. 401
 Knollys, Sir Francis, and his sons,
 ii. 295, 296, 352

 LACHIS, ii. 188
 Lamb's wool, i. 306
 Languishes (= languages), ii.
 102
 Lay (= law), i. 100
 Lay (= scheme), i. 177
 Lay (= lea), i. 112
 Lay on load, i. 151
 Lee, Sir Henry, ii. 288
Legem pone, i. 172
 Let, i. 279 ; ii. 151, &c.
 Lewd, ii. 270, 275
 Lin, ii. 270, &c.
 Live, i. 249
 Lob's pound, i. 335
Lochrine, ii. 239
 Long stock, i. 315
 Losel, ii. 270
 Lover, ii. 184
 Lurch, ii. 402
 Lutes in barbers' shops, ii. 78
 Luzern, i. 351

- MAHOMET'S Pow, ii. 238
 Make (= mate), ii. 211
 Manage arms, i. 64
 Mannock-deny, i. 40
 Marlowe, Christopher, ii. 320 ;
 Peele imitated by, i. 42 ; *Tam-
 burlaine*, allusion to, i. 237 ;
 quoted, ii. 13
 Marston, John, his *Antonio and
 Mellida* quoted, ii. 404 ; passage
 of the *Battle of Alcazar* ridi-
 culed by, i. 253
 Martris (= martyr), ii. 168
Merry Tales and Quick Answers,
 ii. 389
 Mess, i. 140
 Milton's *L'Allegro* (*Cerberus* a
 misprint for *Erebus* in ?), i.
 280
 Miss, ii. 272
 Monk Davy, i. 103
 Motion, ii. 225
 Mought, ii. 273
 Mounting mind, i. 93
 Muleter, i. 274
 Mum, i. 341
 Mun, ii. 273
 Mutton, i. 102
- NAPLES, horse of, ii. 294
 Naught ("let go and be naught"),
 i. 136
 Needly, ii. 177, 247
 Needsly, ii. 96
 Ne'er the near, ii. 179
 Nill, i. 6, 257, &c.
 Not a word but mum, i. 341
 Noul, i. 150
 Noy, ii. 193, 225
- O man in desperation*, i. 304
 Once ("that's once"), i. 140, 324
 Osprey, popular belief about, i.
 254
- PANTABLE, i. 131
 Partly-coloured, ii. 310
 Pass for (= care for), i. 317
 Pass (= pass belief), ii. 152
 Perdy, i. 11 ; ii. 250, &c.
 Perstand, ii. 121, 151, &c.
 Pester'd, ii. 331
 Phaer, Thomas, ii. 319
 Pheer, i. 8, 64
 Philisides, ii. 272
 Pignie, i. 334
 Pioner, i. 274, 330
 Plage, i. 86
 Plash, ii. 323
 Point of war, i. 91
 Point-device, i. 94
 Pot ("go to the pot"), i. 129
 Poultry, ii. 399
 Prease (*and* preace), ii. 5, 287
 Prepare, ii. 143, 188
 Prest, i. 275 ; ii. 91, &c.
 Pretence, ii. 143
 Pretend, i. 120 ; ii. 113, &c.
 Prevail, ii. 110, 134, &c.
 Prime time, i. 262
 Princox, i. 181 ; ii. 120, 202
 Produce, i. 362
 Progeny, i. 237 ; ii. 38, 360
 Proin-stone, ii. 122
 Proper, i. 308
 Properties, i. 71
 Propound, ii. 156
 Pumey, ii. 344
Puritan, The, ii. 379, 381, 382, 397
 Put in ure, ii. 163, 218
 Put to our trump, i. 121
- QUEACHY, i. 142 ; ii. 297
 Quite, i. 60
- RACK (moving masses of vapour),
 ii. 19
 Rack (pace between an amble
 and a trot), ii. 272

- Raught, i. 5, 17, &c.
 Ray, i. 132
 Record, i. 318
 Reduced, i. 272
 Regiment, i. 64, 356
 Remorse, ii. 124, 192
 Remorseful, ii. 71
 Renowned, i. 234
 Rest, ii. 237
 Reverent, i. 207, 246
 Revoke, ii. 176
 Rhamnusia, i. 36
 Rid, i. 40
 Road, i. 152, 181
 Roaring-piece, i. 275
 Rowlands, Samuel, ii. 375
 Ruff, i. 306
- SACK (=to heap), ii. 139, 169
 Sack (loose gown), ii. 174
 Sad, ii. 216
 St. Andrew and St. Luke, i. 312
 Say (=assay), ii. 332
 Say nay and take it, ii. 102
 Saying ("have a saying to"), i. 345
 Scald, i. 323
 Scale, ii. 164
 Scallop-shell, i. 310
 Scorn, ii. 35
 Seized, i. 116
 Set leek, ii. 174
 Shakespeare, his *Venus and Adonis*, ii. 401; Induction to 2 *Henry IV.*, ii. 165; *Richard III.* quoted, i. 277; parodies a line of *The Battle of Alcazar*, i. 253
 Shend, ii. 36
 Shent, i. 63
 Shot, i. 276
 Shroe, i. 53
 Sick, i. 240
 Sidney, Sir Philip (mourning worn by the courtiers for), ii. 272
- Sike, ii. 271
 Singing (a necessary part of education in Elizabethan times), i. 306
 Skill ("it skills not"), ii. 102
 Slops, i. 305
 Smicker, ii. 269
 Solitaries, i. 251
 Sonizance, ii. 270
 Sort, i. 17; ii. 333
 Sort an end, i. 134
 Sound, i. 87
 Spenser imitated, ii. 42, 244; reference to, ii. 318
 Spider-catcher, ii. 136
 Square ("break no square"), i. 95
 Stain, ii. 362
 Stanyhurst, Richard, ridiculed, i. 333
 Start (=started), ii. 262
 State, i. 71
 Stock, i. 315
 Stock ("I'll beat thee like a stock"), ii. 178
 Strange, Ferdinand Lord, ii. 289
 Strond, ii. 322
 Sty, ii. 80
 Suringer, ii. 180
 Surquedry, ii. 249
 Swad, ii. 332
 Swink, ii. 273
- TABLE, ii. 307
 Tables, ii. 379
 Take in gree, ii. 337
 Take in worth, i. 9
 Take us with ye, i. 108
 Tall, ii. 72
 Than (= then), i. 41; ii. 106, 125, &c.
 Think, ii. 269
 Tho, i. 18, 123
Three merry men and three merry men, i. 304

- Three Pigeons*, ii. 376
 Toot, i. 19
 Tosson, ii. 331
 Towards, ii. 103 .
 Toy, ii. 125
 Trick, i. 10, 18
 Trouchman, ii. 289
 Trump, i. 306
 Trumpet sounded thrice before
 the entrance of the Prologue,
 ii. 390
*Turkish Mahamet and Hyrin the
 fair Greek*, ii. 394
 Twagger, i. 7
 Tyrant, ii. 23
- UNCOUTH, i. 35, 288, &c.
 Unhappy, i. 229
 Unhaunted, i. 237
 Unicorn, popular belief about,
 ii. 369
 Unpartial, i. 6
- VADE, i. 19; ii. 153
 Vail, i. 174; ii. 238, &c.
 Valure, ii. 141
 Vavasor, Master Thomas, ii. 293
 Viage, ii. 168
 Vindicta, i. 241
 Virgil, ii. 328
 Vorty pence (*i.e.* I will lay forty
 pence), ii. 180
- WAITING-DAY, i. 180
 Waltering waves, ii. 93
 Watson, Thomas, ii. 319
 Weesels, ii. 15
 Well said, i. 330
 Well-thew'd, ii. 272
 Welshmen proud of their gen-
 tility, i. 104
 Westward ho, i. 197
 What make you? i. 305
 What's he for a man, i. 106
 Where (= whereas), ii. 109,
 196
 Whereas (= where), ii. 94
 Whiffler, ii. 196
 While, i. 17, 189
 Whilst, i. 138
 Whist, ii. 334
Who list to lead a soldier's life, i.
 106
 Whorecop, ii. 178
 Will, i. 295; ii. 59, &c.
 With a wanion, i. 331; ii. 100
 Witned, ii. 276
 Women (play on the words *women*
 and *we men*), i. 167
 Won, i. 14, 36, &c.
 Wood, i. 164, 304
 World (" 'tis a world to see"), ii.
 171
 Worthies, ii. 277

LONDON,
14 KING WILLIAM STREET, STRAND, W.C.

JOHN C. NIMMO'S
AUTUMN LIST OF NEW BOOKS

FOR

OCTOBER 1887.



A NEW ILLUSTRATED WORK BY THE AUTHOR OF
“FLEMISH INTERIORS.”

In large crown 8vo. With One Hundred Illustrations by R. CAULFIELD ORPEN. Cloth elegant, gilt top, price 7s. 6d.

“De Omnibus Rebus.”

AN OLD MAN'S DISCURSIVE RAMBLINGS ON THE ROAD OF
 EVERYDAY LIFE.

By the Author of “Flemish Interiors.”

With One Hundred Illustrations by R. CAULFIELD ORPEN.

NOTE.—These pages are written in the character of a shrewd, observant, and perhaps satirical, but not ill-natured, old bachelor who knows how to find in his journeyings, by omnibus or otherwise, matter for reflection and comment, and who communicates familiarly his impressions of men and things, turning them about so as to get at their humorous, their practical, and their pathetic aspect. With these he mingles past and present experiences of life, congenial episodes, and representative types of character as they suggest themselves to his memory; but his gossip is always popular in character, bearing on subjects of social economy and contemporary ethics necessarily interesting to our common humanity.

New Historical Work by F. G. Lee, D.D.

Large crown 8vo, cloth, price 8s. 6d.

REGINALD POLE,
 CARDINAL ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.

AN HISTORICAL SKETCH. WITH AN INTRODUCTORY PROLOGUE AND
 PRACTICAL EPILOGUE BY

FREDERICK GEORGE LEE, D.D.

With an Etched Portrait of Cardinal Pole.

NOTE.—This volume, besides dealing with the life and character of Cardinal Pole, will specially set forth the nature of his great work as an ecclesiastical statesman and diplomatist,—unpublished details of which will be provided from the Archives of the Vatican, his Register at Lambeth, and various publications and letters of himself and his contemporaries. Incidentally, the further policy of Queen Mary and her great statesman, Bishop Gardiner, will be dealt with; as also the personal characteristics of the Queen herself, and some of the chief Englishmen of Pole's era.

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

New Volumes of the Elizabethan Dramatists Series.

In Two Volumes, post 8vo, cloth, price 7s. 6d. per vol. *net.*

Also fine large paper copies, medium 8vo, cloth.

THE WORKS OF GEORGE PEELE.

Edited by A. H. BULLEN, B.A.

NOTE.—A new *Library Edition* of Peele's works is needed; for Pickering's beautiful volumes are rare and costly. In the present edition some interesting facsimiles of title-pages, &c., will be given.

A New Volume of Elizabethan Lyrics.

Post 8vo, hand-made paper, 750 copies, each numbered, price 10s. 6d. *net.*

Also 250 large paper copies, in half German calf, each numbered.

More Lyrics from the Song-Books of
the Elizabethan Age.

Edited by A. H. BULLEN, B.A.

NOTE.—Many of the poems in this collection are from unique books preserved in the British Museum, the Bodleian Library, the Royal College of Music, and Mr. Halliwell-Phillipps' Library at Hollingbury Copse. Others are printed, for the first time, from MSS. The Editor has been careful to include only such songs as are "choicely good."

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

Small 4to, Two Volumes, handsomely bound in half-German calf, gilt top, price 36s. *net*.

Also 100 copies on fine super royal 8vo paper.

The Life of Benvenuto Cellini.

NEWLY TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH.

By JOHN ADDINGTON SYMONDS.

With Portrait and Eight Etchings by F. LAGUILLERMIE.

Also Eighteen reproductions of the Works of the Master, printed in Gold, Silver, and Bronze.

500 copies of this Edition printed for England and 250 for America.

NOTE.—A book which the great Goethe thought worthy of translating into German with the pen of *Faust* and *Wilhelm Meister*, a book which Auguste Comte placed upon his very limited list for the perusal of reformed humanity, is one with which we have the right to be occupied, not once or twice, but over and over again. It cannot lose its freshness. What attracted the encyclopædic minds of men so different as Comte and Goethe to its pages still remains there. This attractive or compulsive quality, to put the matter briefly, is the flesh and blood reality of Cellini's self-delineation. A man stands before us in his *Memoirs* unsophisticated, unimbellished, with all his native faults upon him, and with all his potent energies portrayed in the veracious manner of Velasquez, with bold strokes and animated play of light and colour. His autobiography is the record of action and passion. Suffering, enjoying, enduring, working with restless activity; hating, loving, hovering from place to place as impulse moves him; the man presents himself dramatically by his deeds and spoken words, never by his pondering or meditative broodings. It is this healthy externality which gives its great charm to Cellini's self-portrayal, and renders it an imperishable document for the student of human nature.

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

NEW ILLUSTRATED EDITION OF DR. DORAN'S GREAT WORK.

In Three Volumes, demy 8vo, Roxburghe binding,
gilt top, price 54s. *net*.

Also large paper copies, royal 8vo, with Portraits in duplicate.

“THEIR MAJESTIES’ SERVANTS.”

ANNALS OF THE ENGLISH STAGE

FROM

THOMAS BETTERTON TO EDMUND KEAN.

By **DR. DORAN, F.S.A.**

Edited and Revised by R. W. LOWE from Author's
Annotated Copy.

With Fifty Copperplate Portraits and Eighty Wood Engravings.

NOTE.—The following are some of the chief features of this new edited and revised edition of Dr. Doran's well-known work.

It is illustrated for the first time with fifty newly engraved copperplate portraits of the leading and best known actors and actresses, all of which are printed as India proofs.

There are also fifty-six illustrations, newly engraved on wood, printed on fine Japanese paper, and mounted at the head of each chapter, as well as some twenty or more character illustrations, also newly engraved on wood, and printed with the text at end of the chapters.

There are numerous new and original footnotes given, as well as a copious and exhaustive Index to each volume.

Besides the demy 8vo edition, a limited number will be printed on royal 8vo, fine deckle-edged paper, with a duplicate set of the fifty portraits, one on Japanese paper and the other on plate paper, as India proofs.

Each of these copies will be numbered.

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

A Bibliography of Theatrical Literature.

In demy 8vo, 400 pages, cloth, price 18s. *net.* Also, One Hundred Copies on fine deckle-edge royal 8vo paper, each numbered.

A BIBLIOGRAPHICAL ACCOUNT OF ENGLISH THEATRICAL LITERATURE FROM *THE EARLIEST TIMES TO THE PRESENT DAY.* By ROBERT W. LOWE.

NOTE.—There is as yet no Bibliography of the general literature of the stage. Plays have been catalogued many times, and some of our greatest bibliographers have directed their attention to Shakespearian literature; but no attempt has been made to give even the baldest catalogue of the large and curious mass of books relating to the History of the Stage, the Biography of Actors and Actresses, the Controversy regarding the Influence of the Stage, the numerous curious Theatrical Trials, and the many scandalous attacks on the personal character of celebrated performers. In the last two classes especially there are many curious pamphlets dealing with the strangest scandals, and often containing the most disgraceful accusations, of which no account is to be found except in the originals themselves, which, having been in many cases suppressed, are of extreme rarity.

The present work is intended to supply in some measure the want which has been felt by all writers on theatrical subjects, as well as by all collectors of theatrical books. It consists of about 2000 titles, the great majority of which are taken directly from the works described. These will be arranged alphabetically, with exhaustive cross-references. Notes regarding each actor and actress will be given, and also an account of the occurrences to which particular works refer, special attention being paid to the less known and more curious pamphlets. Thus, it is hoped, the work will have a historical as well as bibliographical value, and will form a History of the Stage, especially in those details of which regular histories take little or no cognisance. Plays will be excluded, except where they have prefaces, &c., of historical or controversial interest; and of Shakespeariana, only such works will be included as relate to the performance of Shakespeare's plays or the representation of his characters by particular actors.

Quotations of prices at recent famous sales will be given, and the rarity of scarce books will be pointed out.

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

Third Edition, newly Revised and Corrected, and greatly Enlarged, in 2 vols. medium 8vo, cloth, Three Hundred Engravings and Twelve Full-Page Plates, price 21s.

THE ROSICRUCIANS: THEIR RIGHTS AND MYSTERIES.

By HARGRAVE JENNINGS.

Allen's Indian Mail.

"Valuable, interesting, and instructive, the work teaches how dangerous it is to condemn what is not understood, or to criticise what is imperfectly realised. Liberality of judgment should be the motto of mankind in these days of intelligence and enlightenment, and a study of the mysterious will clear the path in this direction from many of the notions conceived in intolerance and nurtured in hardness of heart. Read, gentle reader, and be wise!"

Uniform with A. H. BULLEN'S "Lyrics from the Song-Books of the Elizabethan Age."

Post 8vo, hand-made paper, 500 copies, each numbered, price 10s. 6l. net. Also 250 copies, large paper, in half-German calf, each numbered.

ENGLAND'S HELICON.

A COLLECTION OF LYRICAL POEMS PUBLISHED IN 1600.

Edited by A. H. BULLEN.

The Spectator.

"With what pleasure would Leigh Hunt, Hazlitt, or Charles Lamb have taken into their hands this new edition of the Elizabethan song-book, 'England's Helicon;' and how gladly would they acknowledge the influence of sixty years, the advance in taste, themselves its leaders, which will win for such a book delight and admiration, rather than 'patronage!' The book consists of a collection of lyrical and pastoral poems, and the modern editor, who, one need hardly say, has done his work with perfect care and taste, has prefaced the poems with an introduction telling us all we want to know about almost every one of them."

Imperial 8vo, half-bound crushed morocco, price 21s.

REYNARD THE FOX.

AFTER THE GERMAN VERSION OF GOETHE.

By THOMAS JAMES ARNOLD, Esq.

With Sixty Illustrations from the Designs of WILHELM VON KAULBACH, and Twelve India Proof Steel Engravings by JOSEPH WOLF.

NOTE.—One of the specialities of the present edition consists in the illustrations, faithfully engraved by English artists from the designs of Kaulbach, as well as twelve clever full-page steel engravings by Augustus Fox, from the drawings of Joseph Wolf.

Saturday Review.

"We are more concerned with the engravers' skill, the veracity with which Kaulbach's rich fancy and racy humour are reproduced, together with the congenial spirit of Mr. Wolf's clever drawings, and in these essential particulars the present edition is worthy of warm commendation."

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

THE NEW EDITED AND COMPLETE EDITIONS
OF
The Elizabethan Dramatists.

This is the first instalment towards a collective edition of the Dramatists who lived about the time of Shakespeare. The type will be distributed after each work is printed.

One of the chief features of this New Edition of the Elizabethan Dramatists, besides the handsome and handy size of the volumes, will be the fact that *each Work will be carefully edited and new notes given throughout.*

ALGERNON CHARLES SWINBURNE
(IN THE NINETEENTH CENTURY, JANUARY 1886)

ON THE
Elizabethan Dramatists.

“If it be true, as we are told on high authority, that the greatest glory of England is her literature, and the greatest glory of English literature is its poetry, it is not less true that the greatest glory of English poetry lies rather in its dramatic than its epic or its lyric triumphs. The name of Shakespeare is above the names even of Milton and Coleridge and Shelley; and the names of his comrades in art and their immediate successors are above all but the highest names in any other province of our song. There is such an overflowing life, such a superb exuberance of abounding and exulting strength, in the dramatic poetry of the half century extending from 1590 to 1640, that all other epochs of English literature seem as it were but half awake and half alive by comparison with this generation of giants and of gods. There is more sap in this than in any other branch of the national bay-tree; it has an energy in fertility which reminds us rather of the forest than the garden or the park. It is true that the weeds and briars of the underwood are but too likely to embarrass and offend the feet of the rangers and the gardeners who trim the level flower-plots or preserve the domestic game of enclosed and ordered lowlands in the tamer demesnes of literature. The sun is strong and the wind sharp in the climate which reared the fellows and the followers of Shakespeare. The extreme inequality and roughness of the ground must also be taken into account when we are disposed, as I for one have often been disposed, to wonder beyond measure at the apathetic ignorance of average students in regard of the abundant treasure to be gathered from this widest and most fruitful province in the poetic empire of England. And yet, since Charles Lamb threw open its gates to all comers in the ninth year of the present century, it cannot but seem strange that comparatively so few should have availed themselves of the entry to so rich and royal an estate. Mr. Bullen has taken up a task than which none more arduous and important, none worthier of thanks and praise, can be undertaken by any English scholar.”

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

Volumes now Ready of the new Edited and Complete Editions of the Elizabethan Dramatists.

Post Svo, cloth. Published price, 7s. 6d. per volume *net*; also large fine-paper edition, medium Svo, cloth.

The following are Edited by A. H. BULLEN, B.A. :—

THE WORKS OF GEORGE PEELE.	Two Volumes.
THE WORKS OF JOHN MARSTON.	Three Volumes.
THE WORKS OF THOMAS MIDDLETON.	Eight Volumes.
THE WORKS OF CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE.	Three Volumes.

Others in active preparation.

SOME PRESS NOTICES.

Athenæum.—"Mr. Bullen's edition deserves warm recognition. It is intelligent, scholarly, adequate. His preface is judicious. The elegant edition of the Dramatists of which these volumes are the first is likely to stand high in public estimation. . . . The completion of the series will be a boon to bibliographers and scholars alike."

Saturday Review.—"Mr. Bullen has discharged his task as editor in all important points satisfactorily, his introduction is well informed and well written, and his notes are well chosen and sufficient. . . . We hope it may be his good fortune to give and ours to receive every Dramatist, from Peele to Shirley, in this handsome, convenient, and well-edited form."

The Spectator.—"Probably one of the boldest literary undertakings of our time, on the part of publisher as well as editor, is the fine edition of the Dramatists which has been placed in Mr. Bullen's careful hands; considering the comprehensiveness of the subject, and the variety of knowledge it demands, the courage of the editor is remarkable."

Notes and Queries.—" . . . Appropriately, then, the series Mr. Bullen edits and Mr. Nimmo issues in most attractive guise is headed by Marlowe, the leader, and in some respects all but the mightiest spirit, of the great army of English Dramatists."

The Academy.—"Mr. Bullen is known to all those interested in such things as an authority on most matters connected with old plays. We are not surprised, therefore, to find these volumes well edited throughout. They are not overburdened with notes."

Scotsman.—"Never in the history of the world has a period been marked by so much of literary power and excellence as the Elizabethan period; and never have the difficulties in the way of literature seemed to be greater. The three volumes which Mr. Nimmo has issued now may be regarded as earnest of more to come, and as proofs of the excellence which will mark this edition of the Elizabethan Dramatists as essentially the best that has been published. Mr. Bullen is a competent editor in every respect."

The Standard.—"Throughout Mr. Bullen has done his difficult work remarkably well, and the publisher has produced it in a form which will make the edition of early Dramatists of which it is a part an almost indispensable addition to a well-stocked library."

Pall Mall Gazette.—" . . . If the series is continued as it is begun, by one of the most careful editors, this set of the English Dramatists will be a coveted literary possession."

Daily Telegraph.—"The introduction to this new edition of Marston is of exceeding interest, and is honourable to the earnest spirit in which Mr. Bullen is steadfastly pursuing the object set before him in this notable series."

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

Standard Historical Works.

*Twelve Volumes, demy 8vo, cloth, uncut edges, price £5, 5s. net ;
also in Tree calf, gilt top, Rivière's binding.*

*THE WORKS OF***The Right Hon. Edmund Burke.**

WITH ENGRAVED PORTRAIT FROM THE PAINTING

By Sir JOSHUA REYNOLDS.

Carefully Revised and Collated with the Latest Editions.

NOTE.—The publication of this COMPLETE LIBRARY EDITION of the Writings and Speeches of a great Writer and Orator, whose works have been so frequently quoted of late in the British Houses of Parliament, the publisher feels may be opportune to many readers and admirers of one of the greatest of the sons of men. Viewed in the light of the present age, how great is our admiration of that foresight which foretold, and that wisdom which would have averted, the storms which menaced the peace and well-being of his country! His public labours present a continuous struggle against the stupidity, the obstinacy, and the venality of the politicians of his day.

So long as virtue shall be beloved, wisdom revered, or genius admired, so long will the memory of this illustrious exemplar of all be fresh in the world's history; for human nature has too much interest in the preservation of such a character ever to permit the name of EDMUND BURKE to perish from the earth.

CONTENTS.

Vindication of Natural Society.	Hints for an Essay on the Drama.
The Sublime and Beautiful.	An Essay towards an Abridgment
Observations on a Late Publication	of the English History.
on "The Present State of the	Papers on India.
Nation."	Articles of Charge against Warren
Thoughts on the Cause of the Pre-	Hastings.
sent Discontents.	Speeches in the Impeachment of
Reflections on the Revolution in	Warren Hastings.
France.	Miscellaneous Speeches.
Thoughts on French Affairs.	Letters.
Thoughts and Details on Scarcity.	Index, &c.

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

STANDARD HISTORICAL WORKS—continued.

Medium Svo, fine paper, with Four Etched Portraits, &c., cloth,
21s. net.

**The Autobiography of Edward,
LORD HERBERT OF CHERBURY.**

WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES, APPENDICES, AND A
CONTINUATION OF THE LIFE.

By **SYDNEY L. LEE, B.A.,** Balliol College, Oxford.

Notes and Queries.

"Lord Herbert's autobiography is an absolute masterpiece, worthy of the place assigned it by Mr. Swinburne among the best one hundred books. Quite fascinating are the records of adventure Lord Herbert supplies, and the book, when once the preliminary statement of pedigree, &c., is got over, will be read to the last line by every reader of taste. A new lease of popularity is conferred upon it by the handsome and scholarly reprint Mr. Lee has given to the world. The volume itself belongs to the series of library reprints of Mr. Nimmo, which are simply the most attractive of the day. Mr. Lee, meanwhile, has executed in the most scrupulous, careful, and competent manner the task of editing."

Medium Svo, fine paper, with Four Etched Portraits, &c., cloth,
21s. net.

**The Life of William Cavendish,
DUKE OF NEWCASTLE,**

To which is added the TRUE RELATION OF MY BIRTH,
BREEDING, AND LIFE.

By **MARGARET, DUCHESS OF NEWCASTLE.**

EDITED BY C. H. FIRTH, M.A.

Saturday Review.

"The book is, without doubt, a pleasant one. In the midst of the stony-hearted Restoration, its naive enthusiasm, its quaint and embroidered eloquence, its flavour of a bygone day, give it a curious charm. It is like a Shirley flourishing on into the age of Shadwell and Etherege."

The Scotsman.

"It has a distinct value as a contemporary picture of the life, modes of thought, and habits of a great Royalist nobleman, who played a prominent part in some of the most memorable episodes of English history."

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

STANDARD HISTORICAL WORKS—continued.

Medium 8vo, fine paper, with Ten Etched Portraits, &c., cloth,
Two Volumes, 42s. *net.*

MEMOIRS OF THE LIFE OF COLONEL HUTCHINSON.

By his Widow, **LUCY.**

REVISED AND EDITED BY CHARLES H. FIRTH, M.A.

Athenæum.

"Is an excellent edition of a famous book. Mr. Firth presents the 'Memoirs' with a modernised orthography and a revised scheme of punctuation. He retains the notes of Julius Hutchinson, and supplements them by annotations—corrective and explanatory—of his own. Since their publication in 1805, the 'Memoirs' have been a kind of classic. To say that this is the best and fullest edition of them in existence is to say everything."

Medium 8vo, fine paper, Roxburghe binding, gilt top, and
Two Etchings, price 15s.

A Chronicle History of the Life and Work of William Shakespeare.

PLAYER, POET, AND PLAYMAKER.

By **F. G. FLEAY, M.A.**

From Professor A. W. Ward's Preface to the Second Edition
of Marlowe's "Dr. Faustus."

"Mr. Fleay's new Life of Shakespeare will, in my opinion, before long be acknowledged as one of the most important works on the history of the Elizabethan drama which this age has produced."

Extract from a Letter to the Author from Dr. H. H. Furness.

"The man himself was always unreal to me, and I never could bring myself to believe that he ever really existed. But your book has left upon me the impression, as deep as it is strange, that such a man did really live, and that he belonged to the noble army of workers.

"I had confidence in you and followed holding your hand, at times lost in wonder and admiration over the miraculous memory and indefatigable research of my guide."

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

STANDARD HISTORICAL WORKS—continued.

Copyright Edition, with Ten Etched Portraits. In Ten Vols., demy 8vo, cloth, £5, 5s. net.

Lingard's History of England.

FROM THE FIRST INVASION BY THE ROMANS TO THE
ACCESSION OF WILLIAM AND MARY IN 1688.

By JOHN LINGARD, D.D.

This New Copyright Library Edition of "Lingard's History of England," besides containing all the latest notes and emendations of the Author, with Memoir, is enriched with Ten Portraits, newly etched by Damman, of the following personages, viz. :—Dr. Lingard, Edward I., Edward III., Cardinal Wolsey, Cardinal Pole, Elizabeth, James I., Cromwell, Charles II., James II.

The Times.

"No greater service can be rendered to literature than the republication, in a handsome and attractive form, of works which time and the continued approbation of the world have made classical. . . . The accuracy of Lingard's statements on many points of controversy, as well as the genial sobriety of his view, is now recognised."

The Tablet.

"It is with the greatest satisfaction that we welcome this new edition of Dr. Lingard's 'History of England.' It has long been a desideratum. . . . No general history of England has appeared which can at all supply the place of Lingard, whose painstaking industry and careful research have dispelled many a popular delusion, whose candour always carries his reader with him, and whose clear and even style is never fatiguing."

The Spectator.

"We are glad to see that the demand for Dr. Lingard's *England* still continues. Few histories give the reader the same impression of exhaustive study. This new edition is excellently printed, and illustrated with ten portraits of the greatest personages in our history."

Dublin Review.

"It is pleasant to notice that the demand for Lingard continues to be such that publishers venture on a well-got-up library edition like the one before us. More than sixty years have gone since the first volume of the first edition was published; many equally pretentious histories have appeared during that space, and have more or less disappeared since, yet Lingard lives—is still a recognised and respected authority."

The Scotsman.

"There is no need, at this time of day, to say anything in vindication of the importance, as a standard work, of Dr. Lingard's 'History of England.' . . . Its intrinsic merits are very great. The style is lucid, pointed, and puts no strain upon the reader; and the printer and publisher have neglected nothing that could make this—what it is likely long to remain—the standard edition of a work of great historical and literary value."

Daily Telegraph.

"True learning, untiring research, a philosophic temper, and the possession of a graphic, pleasing style were the qualities which the author brought to his task, and they are displayed in every chapter of his history."

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

STANDARD HISTORICAL WORKS—continued.

Two Volumes, 8vo, Sixty-four Portraits, Roxburghe binding,
gilt top, price 30s. *net.*

MEMOIRS OF COUNT GRAMMONT.

By **ANTHONY HAMILTON.**

A NEW EDITION, EDITED, WITH NOTES, BY SIR WALTER SCOTT.

With Sixty-four Portraits Engraved by EDWARD SCRIVEN.

Hallam.

“The ‘Memoirs of Grammont,’ by Anthony Hamilton, scarcely challenge a place as historical; but we are now looking more at the style than the intrinsic importance of books. Every one is aware of the peculiar felicity and fascinating gaiety which they display.”

T. B. Macaulay.

“The artist to whom we owe the most highly finished and vividly coloured picture of the English Court in the days when the English Court was gayest.”

Medium 8vo, fine paper, Eighty-eight Illustrations, cloth, gilt top,
price 21s. *net.*

OLD TIMES :

A PICTURE OF SOCIAL LIFE AT THE END OF THE
EIGHTEENTH CENTURY.

COLLECTED AND ILLUSTRATED FROM THE SATIRICAL AND OTHER
SKETCHES OF THE DAY.

By **JOHN ASHTON.**

Author of “Social Life in the Reign of Queen Anne.”

With Eighty-eight Illustrations.

Daily Telegraph.

“That is the best and truest history of the past which comes nearest to the life of the bulk of the people. It is in this spirit that Mr. John Ashton has composed ‘Old Times,’ intended to be a picture of social life at the end of the eighteenth century. The illustrations form a very valuable, and at the same time quaint and amusing, feature of the volume.”

Saturday Review.

“‘Old Times,’ however, is not only valuable as a book to be taken up for a few minutes at a time; a rather careful reading will repay those who wish to brush up their recollections of the period. To some extent it may serve as a book of reference, and even historians may find in it some useful matter concerning the times of which it treats. The book is in every respect suited for a hall or library table in a country house.”

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

STANDARD HISTORICAL WORKS—continued.

THE MONKS OF THE WEST,

FROM ST. BENEDICT TO ST. BERNARD.

By the **COUNT DE MONTALEMBERT,**

Member of the French Academy.

Authorised Translation. Seven Volumes 8vo, cloth, £4, 4s. net.

(Published by Messrs. W. BLACKWOOD & SONS, Edinburgh.)

CONTENTS OF THE WORK.

Introduction.	St. Augustin of Canterbury and the Roman Missionaries in England, 597-633.
The Roman Empire after the Peace of the Church.	The Celtic Monks and the Anglo-Saxons.
Monastic Precursors in the East.	St. Wilfrid establishes Roman Unity and the Benedictine Order, 634-709
Monastic Precursors in the West.	Contemporaries and Successors of St. Wilfrid, 650-735.
St. Benedict.	Social and Political Influence of the Monks among the Anglo-Saxons.
St. Gregory the Great — Monastic Italy and Spain in the Sixth and Seventh Centuries.	The Anglo-Saxon Nuns.
The Monks under the First Merovingians.	The Church and the Feudal System—The Monastic Orders and Society.
St. Columbanus—The Irish in Gaul and the Colonies of Luxeuil.	St. Gregory, Monk and Pope.
Christian Origin of the British Isles.	The Predecessors of Calixtus II.
St. Columba, the Apostle of Caledonia, 521-597.	

Times.

“Whatever the Count touches he of necessity adorns. He has produced a great and most interesting work, full of curious facts, and lit up with most noble eloquence.”

Freeman's Journal.

“Of the translation, we must say it is in every respect worthy the original. The nervous style of the author is admirably preserved. It is at the same time spirited and faithful.”

Standard.

“No library of English history will be complete without these glowing pictures of the ‘Monks of the West.’”

NOTE.—Very few sets of this important and well-known work are now left for sale.

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

STANDARD HISTORICAL WORKS—continued.

**The Lives of the Queens of Scotland,
AND ENGLISH PRINCESSES CONNECTED WITH THE
REGAL SUCCESSION OF GREAT BRITAIN.****By AGNES STRICKLAND.**

With Portraits and Historical Vignettes.

Eight Volumes, post 8vo, cloth, £4, 4s. *net.* Also in full calf and half calf bindings.*(Published by Messrs. W. BLACKWOOD & SONS, Edinburgh.)*

CONTENTS OF THE WORK.

Life of Margaret Tudor, Queen of James IV.	Life of the Lady Margaret Douglas, Countess of Lennox.
Life of Magdalene of France, First Queen of James V.	Life of Mary Stuart, Queen of Scotland.
Life of Mary of Lorraine, Second Queen of James V.	Life of Elizabeth Stuart, First Princess Royal of Great Britain.
	Life of Sophia, Electress of Hanover.

English Review.

“Miss Strickland has not only been fortunate in the selection of her subject, but she has sustained to the full her high reputation for research.”

The Standard.

“In ‘The Queens of Scotland’ Miss Strickland prosecutes her original task with as careful research as in her first work, and with undiminished spirit and unaltered delicacy.”

The Guardian.

“We discern freedom and ease of manner, a judicious selection of materials, an evenly balanced judgment, and the sobriety and decision which are the fruits of wide historical knowledge.”

Blackwood’s Magazine.

“Every step in Scotland is historical; the shades of the dead arise on every side; the very rocks breathe. Miss Strickland’s talents as a writer, and turn of mind as an individual, in a peculiar manner fit her for painting a historical gallery of the most illustrious or dignified female characters in that land of chivalry and song.”

NOTE.—Very few sets of this delightful work are now left for sale.

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

OCTAVE UZANNE'S ILLUSTRATED WORKS.

Royal 8vo, cloth, gilt top, Illustrations engraved in colours,
price 42s. *net.*

The Frenchwoman of the Century.

FASHIONS—MANNERS—USAGES.

By OCTAVE UZANNE.

Illustrations in Water Colours by ALBERT LYNCH. Engraved in Colours
by EUGÈNE GAUJEAN.

Morning Post.—"Graceful and light as is this book by M. Octave Uzanne, the clever author of 'The Fan' and 'The Sunshade, Muff, and Glove,' and other works marked by a rare originality, it affords a more complete insight into the ideas of the women of France of this century and of the influence exercised by them than is apparent on the surface. An idea can be formed of the prodigality and luxury that prevailed at the Court of the First Empire by 'a serio-comic document' circulated in 1807 as 'an account of the annual expense of a female fop of Paris.' Its different items amount to the sum of 100,000fr., or £7600 sterling. The women of fashion of a later period are not less well photographed. There are some sparkling pages on those of 1830, at the time when Balzac discovered and sang 'La Femme de Trente Ans,' 'whose beauty shines with all the brightness of a perfumed summer.' Speaking the truth always, but with native gallantry seeking to conceal its harshness, M. Uzanne tells his countrywomen of to-day that 'the woman of this end of the century reigns despotically still in our hearts, but has no longer the same happy influence on our spirits, our manners, our society.' To account for this, as indeed in writing of the moral aspect of all the different social phases that come within his scope, the author reasons of cause and effect with an able lucidity that skilfully avoids dullness. The illustrations are, without exception, artistic and *spirituelle*, and contribute to make of this elegantly bound work, a veritable 'volume de luxe,' which worthily continues the series of productions from M. Uzanne's brilliant and facile pen."

Royal 8vo, cloth, gilt top, 31s. 6d. *net.*

THE FAN. By OCTAVE UZANNE.

Illustrations by PAUL AVRIL.

Standard.—"It gives a complete history of fans of all ages and places; the illustrations are dainty in the extreme. Those who wish to make a pretty and appropriate present to a young lady cannot do better than purchase 'The Fan.'"

Athenæum.—"The letterpress comprises much amusing 'chit-chat,' and is more solid than it pretends to be. This *brochure* is worth reading; nay, it is worth keeping."

Royal 8vo, cloth, gilt top, 31s. 6d. *net.*

The Sunshade, Muff, and Glove.

By OCTAVE UZANNE.

Illustrations by PAUL AVRIL.

Art Journal.—"At first sight it would seem that material could never be found to fill even a volume; but the author, in dealing with his first subject alone, 'The Sunshade,' says he could easily have filled a dozen volumes of this emblem of sovereignty. The work is delightfully illustrated in a novel manner by Paul Avril, the pictures which meander about the work being printed in various colours."

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

Charming Editions, Illustrated with Etchings, of Standard Works, suitable for presentation. Crown 8vo, handsomely bound, either in cloth or parchment bindings, price 7s. 6d. per volume.

1. **THE TALES AND POEMS OF EDGAR ALLAN POE.** With Biographical Essay by JOHN H. INGRAM; and Fourteen Original Etchings, Three Photogravures, and a Portrait newly etched from a life-like Daguerrotype of the Author. In Four Volumes.
2. **WEIRD TALES.** By E. T. W. HOFFMAN. A New Translation from the German. With Biographical Memoir by J. T. BEALBY, formerly Scholar of Corpus Christi College, Cambridge. With Portrait and Ten Original Etchings by AD. LALAUZE. In Two Volumes.
3. **THE LIFE AND OPINIONS OF TRISTRAM SHANDY, GENTLEMAN.** By LAURENCE STERNE. In Two Vols. With Eight Etchings by DAMMAN from Original Drawings by HARRY FURNISS.
4. **THE OLD ENGLISH BARON: A GOTHIC STORY.** By CLARA REEVE. **THE CASTLE OF OTRANTO: A GOTHIC STORY.** By HORACE WALPOLE. In One Vol. With Two Portraits and Four Original Drawings by A. H. TOURRIER, Etched by DAMMAN.
5. **THE ARABIAN NIGHTS ENTERTAINMENTS.** In Four Vols. Carefully Revised and Corrected from the Arabic by JONATHAN SCOTT, LL.D., Oxford. With Nineteen Original Etchings by AD. LALAUZE.
6. **THE HISTORY OF THE CALIPH VATHEK.** By WM. BECKFORD. With Notes, Critical, and Explanatory. **RASSELAS, PRINCE OF ABYSSINIA.** By SAMUEL JOHNSON. In One Vol. With Portrait of BECKFORD, and Four Original Etchings, designed by A. H. TOURRIER, and Etched by DAMMAN.
7. **ROBINSON CRUSOE.** By DANIEL DEFOE. In Two Vols. With Biographical Memoir, Illustrative Notes, and Eight Etchings by M. MOUILLERON, and Portrait by L. FLAMENG.
8. **GULLIVER'S TRAVELS.** By JONATHAN SWIFT. With Five Etchings and Portrait by AD. LALAUZE.
9. **A SENTIMENTAL JOURNEY.** By LAURENCE STERNE. **A TALE OF A TUB.** By JONATHAN SWIFT. In One Vol. With Five Etchings and Portrait by ED. HEDOUIN.
10. **THE HISTORY OF DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA.** Translated from the Spanish of MIGUEL DE CERVANTES SAAVEDRA by MOTTEUX. With copious Notes (including the Spanish Ballads), and an Essay on the Life and Writings of CERVANTES by JOHN G. LOCKHART. Preceded by a Short Notice of the Life and Works of PETER ANTHONY MOTTEUX by HENRI VAN LAUN. Illustrated with Sixteen Original Etchings by R. DE LOS RIOS. Four Volumes.
11. **LAZARILLO DE TORMES.** By Don DIEGO MENDOZA. Translated by THOMAS ROSCOE. And **GUZMAN D'ALFARACHE.** By MATEO ALEMAN. Translated by BRADY. Illustrated with Eight Original Etchings by R. DE LOS RIOS. Two Volumes.
12. **ASMODEUS.** By LE SAGE. Translated from the French. Illustrated with Four Original Etchings by R. DE LOS RIOS.
13. **THE BACHELOR OF SALAMANCA.** By LE SAGE. Translated from the French by JAMES TOWNSEND. Illustrated with Four Original Etchings by R. DE LOS RIOS.

Continued next page.

Continued from page 18.

14. **VANILLO GONZALES**; or, *The Merry Bachelor*. By LE SAGE. Translated from the French. Illustrated with Four Original Etchings by R. DE LOS RIOS.
15. **THE ADVENTURES OF GIL BLAS OF SANTILLANE**. Translated from the French of LE SAGE by TOBIAS SMOLLETT. With Biographical and Critical Notice of LE SAGE by GEORGE SAINTSBURY. New Edition, carefully revised. Illustrated with Twelve Original Etchings by R. DE LOS RIOS. Three Volumes.

The Times.

"Among the numerous handsome reprints which the publishers of the day vie with each other in producing, we have seen nothing of greater merit than this series of volumes. Those who have read these masterpieces of the last century in the homely garb of the old editions may be gratified with the opportunity of perusing them with the advantages of large clear print and illustrations of a quality which is rarely bestowed on such reissues. The series deserves every commendation."

Royal Svo, cloth extra, printed in colours and gilt top, price 12s. 6d.

An elegant and choicely Illustrated Edition of

GOLDSMITH'S VICAR OF WAKEFIELD.

With Prefatory Memoir by GEORGE SAINTSBURY,

And One Hundred and Fourteen Coloured Illustrations by V. A. POIRSON
(Illustrator of "Gulliver's Travels").

Saturday Review.

"Goldsmith's immortal tale is here delightfully illustrated in colour, and there is a prefatory memoir by Mr. George Saintsbury, full of delicate criticism and careful research. The illustrations are sketchy, fresh, merry, and in colours perfectly harmonious. Such a book is a boon to the cultivated reader of every age."

The Guardian.

"A new edition of the 'Vicar of Wakefield' naturally appears with every fresh variety of the arts of printing or illustration. M. Poirson showed so keen an appreciation of the peculiar humour of 'Gulliver's Travels,' that it was only to be expected that he should try his hand at an even more popular book. Mr. Saintsbury has prefixed an excellent critical memoir, and altogether, if Goldsmith could have chosen the garb in which he would best like his Vicar to appear, his ideas would probably have jumped with those of the present publisher."

The Graphic.

"They are indeed some of the most excellent specimens of artistic colour-printing now to be seen; and the book is a wonder of cheapness, seeing it is sold at the low sum of 12s. 6d."

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

A New and Beautiful Edition of the Imitation of Christ.

In demy 8vo, with Fifteen Etchings, bound in full white parchment, gilt top, price 21s. *net*.

The Imitation of Christ.

FOUR BOOKS.

Translated from the Latin by Rev. W. BENHAM, B.D.,
Rector of St. Edmund, King and Martyr, Lombard Street, London.

The text and quaint borders printed in brown ink on fine vellum paper, and illustrated with Fifteen Etchings by L. FLAMENG and CH. WALTNER, from designs by J. P. LAURENS and HENRY LEVY, printed on Japanese paper, make this, for presentation purposes, one of the most beautiful editions at present to be had.

Scotsman,

"We have not seen a more beautiful edition of 'The Imitation of Christ' than this one for many a day."

Magazine of Art.

"This new edition of the 'Imitation' may fairly be regarded as a work of art. It is well and clearly printed; the paper is excellent; each page has its peculiar border, and it is illustrated with fifteen etchings. Further than that the translation is Mr. Benham's we need say nothing more."

Second Edition, post 8vo, cloth elegant, gilt top, price 5s.

Carols and Poems.

FROM THE FIFTEENTH CENTURY TO THE PRESENT TIME.

Edited by A. H. BULLEN, B.A.

NOTE.—120 copies printed on fine medium 8vo paper, with Seven Illustrations on Japanese paper. Each copy numbered.

Saturday Review.

"Since the publication of Mr. Sandys's collection there have been many books issued on carols, but the most complete by far that we have met with is Mr. Bullen's new volume, 'Carols and Poems from the Fifteenth Century to the Present Time.' The preface contains an interesting account of Christmas festivities and the use of carols. Mr. Bullen has exercised great care in verifying and correcting the collections of his predecessors, and he has joined to them two modern poems by Hawker, two by Mr. William Morris, and others by Mr. Swinburne, Mr. Symonds, and Miss Rossetti. Altogether this is one of the most welcome books of the season."

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

Two Very Funny and Humorously Illustrated Books by

A. B. FROST.

Crown 8vo, cloth, gilt top, with One Hundred Illustrations, price 5s.

RUDDER GRANGE. By FRANK R. STOCKTON.

The Times.—"Many of the smaller drawings are wonderfully spirited; there are sketchy suggestions of scenery, which recall the pregnant touches of Bewick; and the figures of animals and of human types are capital, from the row of roosting fowls at the beginning of the chapter to the dilapidated tramp standing hat in hand."

Court and Society Review.—"After looking at the pictures we found ourselves reading the book again, and enjoying Pomona and her reading, and her adventure with the lightning rod, and her dog-fight as much as ever. And to read it twice over is the greatest compliment you can pay to a book of American humour."

Art Journal.—"Mr. Stockton, the author, and Mr. Frost, the artist, have here gone hand in hand to produce the most humorous of stories with the best results."

Morning Post.—"It will be welcomed in its new dress by many who have already made the acquaintance of Euphemia and Pomona, as well as by many who will now meet those excellent types of feminine character for the first time."

Saturday Review.—"The new edition of 'Rudder Grange' has a hundred illustrations by Mr. A. B. Frost; they are extremely good, and worthy of Mr. Stockton's amusing book."

Small 4to, One Hundred and Twenty Illustrations, price 6s.

STUFF AND NONSENSE. By A. B. FROST.

CONTENTS.

<i>The Fatal Mistake—A Tale of a Cat,</i>	<i>The Mule and the Crackers.</i>
<i>Ye Æsthete, ye Boy, and ye Bullfrog.</i>	<i>The Influence of Kindness.</i>
<i>The Balloonists.</i>	<i>Bobby and the Little Green Apples.</i>
<i>The Powers of the Human Eye.</i>	<i>The Awful Comet.</i>
<i>The Crab-Boy and His Elephant.</i>	<i>The Tug of War.</i>
<i>The Old Man of Moriches.</i>	<i>The Ironical Flamingo.</i>
<i>The Bald-headed Man.</i>	<i>ᄂᄃ. ᄂᄃ. ᄂᄃ.</i>

Standard.—"This is a book which will please equally people of all ages. The illustrations are not only extremely funny, but they are drawn with wonderful artistic ability, and are full of life and action."

"It is far and away the best book of 'Stuff and Nonsense' which has appeared for a long time."

Press.—"The most facetious bit of wit that has been penned for many a day, both in design and text, is Mr. A. B. Frost's 'Stuff and Nonsense.' 'A Tale of a Cat' is funny, 'The Balloonists' is perhaps rather extravagant, but nothing can outdo the wit of 'The Powers of the Human Eye,' whilst 'Ye Æsthete, ye Boy, and ye Bullfrog' may be described as a 'roarer.' Mr. Frost's pen and pencil know how to chronicle fun, and their outcomes should not be overlooked."

Graphic.—"Grotesque in the extreme. His jokes will rouse many a laugh."

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

IMAGINARY CONVERSATIONS.By **WALTER SAVAGE LANDOR.**

In Five Vols. crown 8vo, cloth, 30s.

FIRST SERIES—CLASSICAL DIALOGUES, GREEK AND ROMAN.

SECOND SERIES—DIALOGUES OF SOVEREIGNS AND STATESMEN.

THIRD SERIES—DIALOGUES OF LITERARY MEN.

FOURTH SERIES—DIALOGUES OF FAMOUS WOMEN.

FIFTH SERIES—MISCELLANEOUS DIALOGUES.

NOTE.—*This New Edition is printed from the last Edition of his Works, revised and edited by John Forster, and is published by arrangement with the Proprietors of the Copyright of Walter Savage Landor's Works.*

The Times.

"The abiding character of the interest excited by the writings of Walter Savage Landor, and the existence of a numerous band of votaries at the shrine of his refined genius, have been lately evidenced by the appearance of the most remarkable of Landor's productions, his 'Imaginary Conversations,' taken from the last edition of his works. To have them in a separate publication will be convenient to a great number of readers."

The Athenæum.

"The appearance of this tasteful reprint would seem to indicate that the present generation is at last waking up to the fact that it has neglected a great writer, and if so, it is well to begin with Landor's most adequate work. It is difficult to overpraise the 'Imaginary Conversations.' The eulogiums bestowed on the 'Conversations' by Emerson will, it is to be hoped, lead many to buy this book."

Scotsman.

"An excellent service has been done to the reading public by presenting to it, in five compact volumes, these 'Conversations.' Admirably printed on good paper, the volumes are handy in shape, and indeed the edition is all that could be desired. When this has been said, it will be understood what a boon has been conferred on the reading public; and it should enable many comparatively poor men to enrich their libraries with a work that will have an enduring interest."

BOOK-CORNER PROTECTORS.

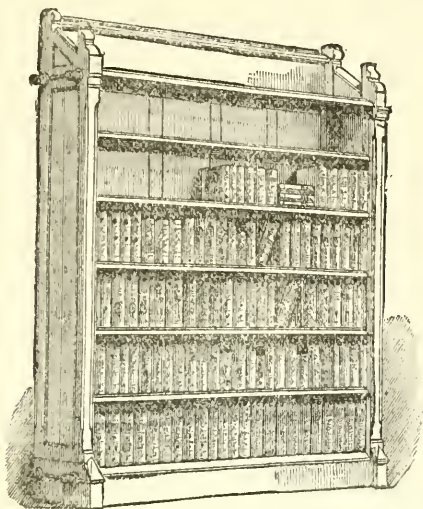
Metal Tips carefully prepared for placing on the Corners of Books to preserve them from injury while passing through the Post Office or being sent by Carrier.

Extract from "The Times," April 18th.

"That the publishers and booksellers second the efforts of the Post Office authorities in endeavouring to convey books without damage happening to them is evident from the tips which they use to protect the corners from injury during transit."

1s. 6d. per Gross, *net*.*14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.*

The American Patent Portable Book-Case.



For Students, Barristers, Home Libraries, &c.

THIS Book-case will be found to be made of very solid and durable material, and of a neat and elegant design. The shelves may be adjusted for books of any size, and will hold from 150 to 300 volumes. As it requires neither nails, screws, or glue, it may be taken to pieces in a few minutes, and reset up in another room or house, where it would be inconvenient to carry a large frame.

Full Height, 5 ft. 11½ in. ; Width, 3 ft. 8 inch ; Depth of Shelf, 10½ in.

Black Walnut, price £6, 6s. net.

"The accompanying sketch illustrates a handy portable book-case of American manufacture, which Mr. NIMMO has provided. It is quite different from an ordinary article of furniture, such as upholsterers inflict upon the public, as it is designed expressly for holding the largest possible number of books in the smallest possible amount of space. One of the chief advantages which these book-cases possess is the ease with which they may be taken apart and put together again. No nails or metal screws are employed, nothing but the hand is required to disassemble or reconstruct the case. The parts fit together with mathematical precision; and, from a package of boards of very moderate dimensions, a firm and substantial book-case can be erected in the space of a few minutes. Appearances have by no means been overlooked; the panelled sides, bevelled edges, and other simple ornaments, give to the cases a very neat and tasteful look. For students, or others whose occupation may involve frequent change of residence, these book-cases will be found most handy and desirable, while, at the same time, they are so substantial, well-made, and convenient, that they will be found equally suitable for the library at home."

14 King William Street, Strand, London, W.C.

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



AA 000 630 779 7



3 1210 00333 4396

